# Critical values of $L$-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}$ over a number field 

A thesis

submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements
for the degree of

Doctor of Philosophy
by

## Gunja Sachdeva

ID: 20123209

# INDIAN INSTITUTE OF SCIENCE EDUCATION AND RESEARCH PUNE 

This thesis is dedicated to my mom.
She has been my inspiration and motivation throughout this work.

## Certificate

Certified that the work incorporated in the thesis entitled "Critical values of L-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}$ over a number field", submitted by Gunja Sachdeva was carried out by the candidate under my supervision. The work presented here or any part of it has not been included in any other thesis submitted previously for the award of any degree or diploma from any other university or institution.

## Declaration

I declare that this written submission represents my ideas in my own words and where others' ideas have been included, I have adequately cited and referenced the original sources. I also declare that I have adhered to all principles of academic honesty and integrity and have not misrepresented or fabricated or falsified any idea/data/fact/source in my submission. I understand that violation of the above will be cause for disciplinary action by the institute and can also evoke penal action from the sources which have thus not been properly cited or from whom proper permission has not been taken when needed.

## Abstract

We prove an algebraicity result for all the critical values of L-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}$ over a totally real field, and a CM field separately. These $L$ functions are attached to a cohomological cuspidal automorphic representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}$ having cohomology with respect to a general coefficient system and an algebraic Hecke character of $\mathrm{GL}_{1}$. This is derived from the theory of Rankin-Selberg $L$-functions attached to pairs of automorphic representations on $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{2}$. Our results are a generalization and refinement of the results of Mahnkopf [26] and Geroldinger [14]. The resulting expressions for critical values of the Rankin-Selberg $L$-functions are compatible with Deligne's conjecture. As an application, we obtain algebraicity results for symmetric square $L$-functions.

## Acknowledgements

Undertaking this PhD has been a truly life-changing experience for me and it would not have been possible to do this without the support and guidance that I received from many people. I would like to thank everyone who contributed in some way or the other. First and foremost, I thank my academic advisor, Professor A. Raghuram, for agreeing to supervise my thesis and for giving me a very interesting problem to work on. During my tenure, his contributions have resulted in a rewarding graduate school experience. By giving me intellectual freedom in my work, engaging me in discussing new ideas, and insisting on high quality work in all my endeavors he has inspired me greatly. He provided a friendly and cooperative atmosphere at work as well as useful feedback and insightful comments during our meetings. The joy and enthusiasm he has for his research is contagious, which has motivated me through some of the tough times I had during the course of my Ph.D work. He sets an excellent example of a mathematician and I consider myself lucky to work under his guidance. Additionally, I would like to thank the other two RAC (research advisory committee) members Dr. Steven Spallone and Dr. Baskar Balasubramanyam for their time and insightful questions which they asked during my presentations.

I am grateful for the funding that has allowed me to pursue my graduate studies; IISER for the PhD Scholarship throughout the tenure of PhD program. I would also like to thank all the research institutes that have provided me with the opportunity to attend various summer schools, conferences and workshops across the world. This has helped me to enhance my mathemat-
ical knowledge and shape my career as a mathematician by providing me a valuable platform to interact with experts in the area.

Finally, I would like to acknowledge all my friends who supported me during my time here. I am indebted to everyone (especially Ashi) who helped me with open hearts during my bad times and has been ever so helpful in numerous way. I would also like to thank my family, especially my parents, brothers Deven and Kushal, and my sister-in-law Vaani for their unconditional love, affection and understanding. My mom has always been a constant source of encouragement and her faith in me has inspired me to give my best. Thank you for always supporting my decisions. I have been very lucky to have met my best friend Tanushree here, and I thank her for her friendship, love, and unyielding support. I owe a great debt of gratitude to all the members of the badminton group of which I was a member for over two years. Last but not the least I thank Neha for providing support and help during the course of writing.

## Statement of Originality

The main results of this thesis which constitute original research are Theorems 1.2 and 1.3. This leads to Corollaries 1.4 and 1.5 .

Sections 4.2.2 and 5.4; Propositions 4.6, 4.19 and 4.20; Lemma 5.20 as well as Theorem 5.11 are original subsidiary results that are required to prove the main results. As an application, main theorem helps to prove Theorem 1.6.

## Contents

Abstract ..... i
Acknowledgements ..... ii
Statement of Originality ..... iv
1 Introduction ..... 1
1.1 History and motivation of the problem. ..... 1
1.2 Statements of the theorems ..... 2
2 Preliminaries ..... 12
2.1 Notations and Definitions ..... 12
2.2 Various Cohomologies ..... 18
3 Representation Theory and Cohomology ..... 22
3.1 Finite dimensional representations ..... 22
3.2 Algebraic Hecke Characters ..... 23
3.3 Cuspidal Cohomological representations of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}$ ..... 30
3.3.1 Cohomological representations of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{R})$ ..... 31
3.3.2 Cohomological representations of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{C})$ ..... 32
3.4 Eisentein Cohomology for $\mathrm{GL}_{2}$ ..... 36
3.4.1 Choice of $\lambda$ for non-zero cohomology ..... 37
3.4.2 Action of $K_{2, \infty} / K_{2, \infty}^{0}$ on group cohomology ..... 42
3.4.3 Eisenstein cohomology classes corresponding to $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$ ..... 45
4 Analytic Theory of L-functions ..... 46
4.1 Rankin-Selberg L-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{2}$ ..... 46
4.1.1 Definition of Whittaker Model ..... 46
4.1.2 The global integral ..... 47
4.1.3 Choice of local Whittaker vectors for induced represen- tations of $\mathrm{GL}_{2}$ ..... 48
4.1.4 Integral representation of $L_{f}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)$ ..... 54
4.2 Special values of $L$-functions on $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}$ ..... 56
4.2.1 Local Langlands correspondence for $\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{F})$ ..... 56
4.2.2 Critical set for $L$-functions ..... 59
4.3 Interlacing of weights ..... 68
5 Cohomological interpretation of the integral ..... 74
5.1 The cohomology classes ..... 75
5.2 The global pairing ..... 78
5.3 $L$-value as a global pairing of cohomology classes ..... 81
5.4 The main identity for the critical values $L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)$ ..... 83
6 Galois equivariance ..... 89
6.1 The action of $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ ..... 89
6.2 Proof of Theorem 1.2 ..... 92
6.3 Proof of Theorem 1.3 ..... 96
6.4 Application: Symmetric square $L$-function ..... 99
6.4.1 Proof of Theorem 1.6 ..... 101
Bibliography ..... 102

## Chapter 1

## Introduction

### 1.1 History and motivation of the problem.

There has been a long history involving special values of automorphic $L$ functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{n} \times \mathrm{GL}_{m}$, where the special values are written as algebraic multiples of complex invariants defined by means of representation theory and cohomological tools. More precisely, given a cuspidal automorphic representation $\Pi$ on a reductive algebraic group $G$, there have been attempts to answer the following questions:

- What are the interesting integers $s=m$ to consider for $L(s, \Pi)$ ?
- What can we say about algebraicity properties of $L(m, \Pi)$ ?

This work is related to a conjecture of Deligne on special values of motivic $L$-functions. The statement of the conjecture is as follows (see Deligne [11, Conj. 2.8]):

Conjecture 1.1 Let $M$ be a pure motive over $\mathbb{Q}$ with coefficients in a number field $\mathbb{Q}(M)$. It asserts that the critical values at $s=m \in \mathbb{Z}$ of the L-function attached to Motive M can be described, upto multiplication by elements in a number field $\mathbb{Q}(M)$, in terms of geometric motivic periods $c^{ \pm}(M)$ and certain explicit power of $(2 \pi i)$ as follows:

$$
L(m, M) \sim_{\mathbb{Q}(M)}(2 \pi i)^{d(m)} c^{(-1)^{m}}(M) .
$$

In 1998, Mahnkopf [26] started looking at the problem of proving an algebraicity result for all critical values of Rankin-Selberg $L$-functions on $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}$ over a number field $F$. In his paper, he proved the algebraicity of the critical values of the L-function attached to a cuspidal automorphic representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}$ over $\mathbb{Q}$ having cohomology with respect to constant coefficients. Later in 2015, his student Geroldinger [14], generalized his work to arbitrary cohomological weights $\left(\mu_{1}, \mu_{2}, \mu_{3}\right)$ of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}$ over $\mathbb{Q}$ and also proved a functional equation for $p$-adic automorphic $L$-functions. This thesis deals with proving an algebraicity result for the special values of $L$-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}$ in the following two situations:

1. Over a totally real field having cohomology with general coefficients $\mu=\left(\mu_{1}, \mu_{2}, \mu_{3}\right) ;$
2. Over a CM field (totally imaginary quadratic field over a totally real field) having cohomology with coefficients $\mu=\left(\mu^{\iota}, \mu^{\bar{\imath}}\right)$ where $\mu^{\iota}=$ $\left(\mu_{1}, \mu_{2}, \mu_{3}\right)$ and $\mu^{\bar{\tau}}=\left(\mu_{1}^{*}, \mu_{2}^{*}, \mu_{3}^{*}\right)$ such that $\mu_{2}=\mu_{2}^{*}$ and also $\mu$ is a "parallel" weight.

Such results can be proved by giving a cohomological interpretation to an integral representing a critical $L$-value.

### 1.2 Statements of the theorems.

Algebraicity results for all critical values of certain Rankin-Selberg $L$-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}$ over a number field $F$ derives from the theory of $L$-functions attached to pairs of automorphic representations on $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{2}$. Once we have $L$-functions on $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{2}$, we adapt general techniques and methods of Raghuram's paper [29] to prove the main theorems. To describe the theorems in greater detail, we need some notations. Suppose $\mathbb{A}_{F}$ is the ring of adeles of $F$. Given a regular algebraic cuspidal automorphic representation
$\Pi$ of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)$, one knows from Clozel [9] that there is a pure dominant integral weight $\mu$ such that $\Pi$ has a nontrivial contribution to the cohomology of some locally symmetric space of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}$ with coefficients coming from the finite-dimensional representation with highest weight $\mu$. We denote this as $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$, for $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3}\right)$, where $T_{3}$ is the diagonal torus of $G_{3}=\mathrm{GL}_{3}$. Let $\Pi=\Pi_{\infty} \otimes \Pi_{f}$ be the usual decomposition of $\Pi$ into its archimedean part $\Pi_{\infty}$ and its finite part $\Pi_{f}$. One knows that its rationality field $\mathbb{Q}(\Pi)$ is a number field and that $\Pi$ is defined over this number field. For a given weight $\mu$, the representation $\mathcal{M}_{\mu}$ is defined over a number field $\mathbb{Q}(\mu)$, and by Clozel [9], it is known that cuspidal cohomology has a $\mathbb{Q}(\mu)$-structure; hence the realization of $\Pi_{f}$ as a Hecke-summand in cuspidal cohomology in lowest possible degree has a $\mathbb{Q}(\Pi)$-structure. On the other hand, the Whittaker model $\mathcal{W}\left(\Pi_{f}\right)$ of the finite part of the representation admits a $\mathbb{Q}(\Pi)$-structure. Following Raghuram-Shahidi [33], on comparing these two $\mathbb{Q}(\Pi)$-structures, certain periods $p^{\epsilon \Pi}(\Pi) \in \mathbb{C}^{\times}$were defined and studied; here $\epsilon_{\Pi}=\left(\epsilon_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{r}}$ is a collection of signs indexed by the set $S_{r}$ of real places of $F$. For any $\sigma \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$, one knows that ${ }^{\sigma} \Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3},{ }^{\sigma} \mu\right)$ and one can define periods simultaneously for all ${ }^{\sigma} \Pi$. Henceforth, let $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3}\right)$ stand for a dominant integral pure weight and consider $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$. The statement of the theorems are as follows:

Theorem 1.2 ( $F$ is totally real) Let $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$ with $\varepsilon_{\Pi_{v}}=\mathbb{1}$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$ (see Proposition 3.9 for the definition of $\varepsilon_{\Pi_{v}}$ ), and let $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3}\right)$ such that for each $\mu=\left(\mu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}, \mu_{v}=\left(n_{v}, 0,-n_{v}\right)$ with $n_{v}$ a non-negative integer. Put $n=\min \left\{n_{v}\right\}$. Let $\chi: F^{\times} \backslash \mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$be a character of finite order, and define $\mathbb{Q}(\chi):=\mathbb{Q}(\{$ values of $\chi\})$. Suppose that $m \in \mathbb{Z}$ is critical for $L_{f}(s, \Pi \otimes \chi)$, the finite part of the standard degree-3 L-function attached to $\Pi$ and $\chi$. Then

$$
m \in \begin{cases}\left\{1-n_{e v}, \ldots,-3,-1 ; 2,4, \ldots, n_{e v}\right\}, & \text { if } \chi \text { is totally even, } \\ \left\{1-n_{o d}, \ldots,-4,-2,0 ; 1,3, \ldots, n_{o d}\right\}, & \text { if } \chi \text { is totally odd }\end{cases}
$$

where $n_{e v}=2\left[\frac{n+1}{2}\right]=$ the largest even positive integer less than or equal to $n+1$, and $n_{\text {od }}=2\left[\frac{n}{2}\right]+1=$ the largest odd positive integer less than or equal to $n+1$. (If $\chi$ is even at one place and odd at another place then there are no critical points.) Fix a quadratic totally odd character $\xi$ once and for all (which will be relevant only when $\chi$ is totally odd). Consider the four cases:

Case 1a. $\chi$ is totally even and $m \in\left\{2,4, \cdots, n_{\mathrm{ev}}\right\}$.
Define $\Omega_{r}^{+}(\Pi):=p^{\epsilon \Pi}(\Pi) L_{f}(-1, \Pi)^{-1}$. There exists a nonzero complex number $P_{\infty}^{1}(\mu, m)$ depending only the weight $\mu$ and the critical point $m$ such that

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi)} P_{\infty}^{1}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{+}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2}
$$

where, by $\approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi)}$, we mean up to an element of the number field which is the compositum of the rationality fields $\mathbb{Q}(\Pi)$ and $\mathbb{Q}(\chi)$; and $\mathcal{G}(\chi)$ is the Gauß sum of $\chi$.

Case 1b. $\chi$ is totally even and $m \in\left\{1-n_{\mathbf{e v}}, \cdots,-3,-1\right\}$.
Define $\Omega_{l}^{+}(\Pi):=p^{\epsilon \Pi}(\Pi) L_{f}(2, \Pi)^{-1}$. There exists a nonzero complex number $P_{\infty}^{2}(\mu, m)$ such that

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi)} \quad P_{\infty}^{2}(\mu, m) \Omega_{l}^{+}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)
$$

Case 2a. $\chi$ is totally odd and $m \in\left\{1,3, \cdots, n_{\text {od }}\right\}$.
Define $\Omega_{r}^{-}(\Pi):=p^{\epsilon_{\Pi}}(\Pi) L_{f}(0, \Pi \otimes \xi)^{-1}$. There exists a nonzero complex number $P_{\infty}^{3}(\mu, m)$ such that

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi)} \quad P_{\infty}^{3}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{-}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2} \mathcal{G}(\xi)
$$

where $\mathcal{G}(\xi)$ is the Gauß sum of $\xi$.

Case 2b. $\chi$ is totally odd and $m \in\left\{1-n_{\text {od }}, \cdots,-4,-2,0\right\}$.
Define $\Omega_{l}^{-}(\Pi):=p^{\epsilon_{\Pi}}(\Pi) L_{f}(1, \Pi \otimes \xi)^{-1}$. There exists a nonzero complex number $P_{\infty}^{4}(\mu, m)$ such that

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi)} \quad P_{\infty}^{4}(\mu, m) \Omega_{l}^{-}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)
$$

Moreover, in each of the cases, the ratio of the L-value on the left hand side divided by all the quantities in the right hand side is equivariant for the action of $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$.

This theorem has appeared in the article [31]. For $F=\mathbb{Q}, \mu=0$ and $m=1$, the case 2a above is the main rationality result in Mahnkopf [26]; and for $F=\mathbb{Q}$ and general $\mu$, a weak form of the above theorem is implicit in the construction of the $p$-adic $L$-functions in Geroldinger [14]. Let's mention in passing that if $n=0$ and $\chi$ is totally even, then there are no critical points. Now we come to CM case where the shape of the main theorem is similar to the totally real case but the input data is different and more complicated.

Theorem 1.3 ( $F$ is a CM field) Let $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$ with $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3}\right)$. We suppose that $\mu$ is a parallel weight, that is, $\mu=\left(\mu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$,

$$
\mu_{v}=\left(n_{1}, 0, n_{2} ;-n_{2}, 0,-n_{1}\right)
$$

with $n_{1}$ a non-negative integer and $n_{2}$ a non-positive integer. (See Section 2.1 for the definition of $S_{\infty}$.) Furthermore, let $\chi: F^{\times} \backslash \mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$be an algebraic Hecke character also of parallel weight such that

$$
\chi_{\infty}\left(z_{\infty}\right)=\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}}\left(\frac{z_{v}}{\left|z_{v}\right|}\right)^{-2 t}
$$

for some $t \in \mathbb{Z}$. For integers $a$ and $b$, let

$$
[a, b]:=\{m \in \mathbb{Z} \mid a \leq m \leq b\} .
$$

Suppose that $m \in \mathbb{Z}$ is critical for $L_{f}(s, \Pi \otimes \chi)$, the finite part of the standard degree-3 L-function attached to $\Pi$ and $\chi$. Then

- for $t$ strictly positive,

$$
m \in \begin{cases}{\left[2+n_{1}-t, t-n_{1}-1\right]} & \text { if } 0 \leq n_{1} \leq t-2 \\ {\left[t-n_{1}, n_{1}+1-t\right]} & \text { if } t \leq n_{1} \leq 2 t-1 \\ {[1-t, t]} & \text { if } n_{1} \geq 2 t\end{cases}
$$

if $n_{1}=t-1$ then there are no critical points;

- for $t$ strictly negative,

$$
m \in \begin{cases}{\left[2-n_{2}+t, n_{2}-1-t\right]} & \text { if } t+2 \leq n_{2} \leq 0 \\ {\left[n_{2}-t, 1+t-n_{2}\right]} & \text { if } 2 t+1 \leq n_{2} \leq t \\ {[1+t,-t]} & \text { if } n_{2} \leq 2 t\end{cases}
$$

if $n_{2}=t+1$, there are no critical points.
(Ift $=0$, that is, $\chi$ is finite order character, then there are no critical points.) Furthermore, fix once and for all the unitary algebraic Hecke character $\phi$ of parallel weight such that $\phi_{\infty}(z)=\left(\frac{z}{|z|}\right)^{2}$. Consider the cases:

Case 1. $t$ is strictly positive, $n_{2} \leq-2 t, n_{1} \geq 1$ and

$$
m \in \begin{cases}{\left[2+n_{1}-t, t-n_{1}-1\right]} & \text { if } n_{1} \leq t-2 \\ {\left[t-n_{1}, n_{1}+1-t\right]} & \text { if } t \leq n_{1} \leq 2 t-1 \\ {[1-t, t]} & \text { if } n_{1} \geq 2 t\end{cases}
$$

Define $\Omega^{+}(\Pi):=p(\Pi) L_{f}(0, \Pi \otimes \phi)^{-1}$. Then there exists nonzero complex numbers $P_{\infty}^{+}(\mu, m)$ (depending only the weight $\mu$ and the critical point $m)$ and $c^{+}\left(\phi \chi^{-1}\right)$ (depending on characters $\chi$ and $\phi$ ) such that

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi, \phi)} \quad P_{\infty}^{+}(\mu, m) \Omega^{+}(\Pi) c^{+}\left(\phi \chi^{-1}\right) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2} \mathcal{G}(\phi),
$$

where, by $\approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi, \phi)}$, we mean up to an element of the number field which is the compositum of the rationality fields $\mathbb{Q}(\Pi), \mathbb{Q}(\chi)$ and $\mathbb{Q}(\phi)$; and $\mathcal{G}(\chi)($ resp. $\mathcal{G}(\phi))$ is the Gauß sum of $\chi($ resp. $\phi)$.

Case 2. $t$ is strictly negative, $n_{1} \geq-2 t, n_{2} \leq-1$ and

$$
m \in \begin{cases}{\left[2-n_{2}+t, n_{2}-1-t\right]} & \text { if } t+2 \leq n_{2} \\ {\left[n_{2}-t, 1+t-n_{2}\right]} & \text { if } 2 t+1 \leq n_{2} \leq t \\ {[1+t,-t]} & \text { if } n_{2} \leq 2 t\end{cases}
$$

Define $\Omega^{-}(\Pi):=p(\Pi) L_{f}\left(1, \Pi \otimes \phi^{-1}\right)^{-1}$. There exists nonzero complex numbers $P_{\infty}^{-}(\mu, m)$ and $c^{+}(\chi \phi)$ such that

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi, \phi)} \quad P_{\infty}^{-}(\mu, m) \Omega^{-}(\Pi) c^{+}(\chi \phi) \mathcal{G}(\chi) \mathcal{G}(\phi)^{-2}
$$

Moreover, in each of the cases, the ratio of the L-value on the left hand side divided by all the quantities in the right hand side is equivariant for the action of $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$.

This theorem will appear in the forthcoming article [35], in which author will address the general $\mu$ situation. For a cuspidal automorphic representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)$ which is regular conjugate self-dual, cohomological, the above theorem is contained in the main rationality results of Jie Lin's thesis [25].

The proof of theorems, following [26], is based on an integral representation for the value $L_{f}(m, \Pi \times \chi)$, which we derive from the Rankin-Selberg theory of $L$-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{2}$, by taking $\Pi$ on $\mathrm{GL}_{3}$ and an induced representation $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$ on $\mathrm{GL}_{2}$. Furthermore, assume that the representations are such that $s=1 / 2$ is critical for the Rankin-Selberg L-function attached to $\Pi \times$ $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$. We note that

$$
L\left(s, \Pi \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)=L\left(s+1 / 2, \Pi \otimes \chi_{1}\right) L\left(s-1 / 2, \Pi \otimes \chi_{2}\right)
$$

Using results from [26] and [30], we can arrange for the data $d_{1}, d_{2}, \chi_{1}^{0}$ and $\chi_{2}^{0}$ in totally real case (Proposition 4.19) and for the data $\sigma_{1}, \sigma_{2}, \chi_{1}^{1}$ and $\chi_{2}^{1}$ in CM case (Proposition 4.20) so as to afford an interpretation of the critical $L$ value $L\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)$ as a Poincaré pairing between the pull-back to $\mathrm{GL}_{2}$ of a cuspidal cohomology class $\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}$ for $\Pi$ and an Eisenstein cohomology class
$\vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}$ for $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$ (see Theorem 5.11). Now we freeze one of the characters $\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}$, and let the other vary, to capture all the critical values $L(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)$. In Section 5.4, for the each of the cases above in both the theorems, we express $L(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)$ in terms of certain periods and the Poincaré pairing of $\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}$ and $\vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}$, from which we deduce the required algebraicity result in Sections 6.2 and 6.3.

Let's now briefly address the compatibility of algebraicity results with motivic periods and motivic $L$-functions. Let $M$ be a pure motive over $\mathbb{Q}$ with coefficients in a number field $\mathbb{Q}(M)$. Suppose $M$ is critical, then a celebrated conjecture of Deligne [11, Conjecture 2.8] relates the critical values of its $L$-function $L(s, M)$ to certain periods that arise out of a comparison of the Betti and de Rham realizations of the motive. One expects a cohomological cuspidal automorphic representation $\Pi$ to correspond to a motive $M(\Pi)$; one of the properties of this correspondence is that the standard $L$-function $L(s, \Pi)$ is the motivic $L$-function $L(s, M(\Pi))$ up to a shift in the $s$-variable; see Clozel [9, Section 4]. With the current state of technology, it seems impossible to compare our periods $p^{\epsilon}(\Pi)$ with Deligne's periods $c^{ \pm}(M(\Pi))$. Be that as it may, one can still claim that Theorems 1.2 and 1.3 are compatible with Deligne's conjecture by considering the behavior of $L$-values under twisting by characters. Blasius [2] and Panchishkin [28] have independently studied the behavior of $c^{ \pm}(M(\Pi))$ upon twisting the motive $M(\Pi)$ by a Dirichlet character (more generally by Artin motives). Using Deligne's conjecture, they predict the behavior of critical values of motivic $L$-functions upon twisting by algebraic Hecke characters. This takes the following form in case of Theorem 1.2 which we state only when the twisting character is a totally even finite order Dirichlet character:

Corollary 1.4 ( $F$ is totally real) Let $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right.$ ) and $\chi: F^{\times} \backslash \mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$ be of finite order and which is totally even. If the critical point $m$ is to the
right of the center of symmetry then

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx L_{f}(m, \Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2}
$$

but if the critical point $m$ is to the left of the center of symmetry then we have

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx L_{f}(m, \Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)
$$

In both the cases the ratio is $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$-equivariant.

From the above relation between critical values for twisted $L$-functions with the corresponding values of the untwisted $L$-functions we may claim that our result is compatible with Deligne's conjecture. See also [32, Section 7] where such relations for twisted critical values are conjectured for symmetric power $L$-functions of a modular form.
Analogously it takes the following form in case of Theorem 1.3 where the twisting character is a unitary algebraic Hecke character, which is enough to state for a particular sub-case of each case:

Corollary 1.5 ( $F$ is CM field) Let $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$ and $\chi: F^{\times} \backslash \mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$ be a unitary algebraic Hecke character, defined as in Theorem 1.3. Also fix a unitary Hecke character $\phi$ as stated in Theorem 1.3. If $t \geq 1 ; n_{1} \geq 1 ; n_{2} \leq$ $-2 t$ and the critical point $m$ satisfies $1-t \leq m \leq t$ then

$$
\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{\mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2}} \approx \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \phi)}{\mathcal{G}(\phi)^{2}} \cdot c^{+}\left(\phi \chi^{-1}\right),
$$

but if $t \leq-1 ; n_{1} \geq-2 t ; n_{2} \leq-1$ and the critical point $m$ is such that $1+t \leq m \leq-t$ then we have

$$
\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{\mathcal{G}(\chi)} \approx \frac{L_{f}\left(m, \Pi \otimes \phi^{-1}\right)}{\mathcal{G}(\phi)^{-1}} \cdot c^{+}(\chi \phi) .
$$

In both the cases the ratio is $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$-equivariant.
The above corollary suggests a factorization of the periods of $\chi \phi$ in terms of the periods of $\chi$ and of $\phi$, possibly giving a symmetric form to the above
equations.
The proof of both the corollaries follows by taking ratio of $L$-values:
$L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)$ and $L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \eta)$ where $\eta$ is the trivial character when $F$ is totally real or $\eta$ is a fixed unitary algebraic Hecke character when $F$ is CM field.

Finally, as an application let's discuss the case of symmetric square $L$ functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{2}$. For a totally real case Theorem 1.2 applies to the symmetric square $L$-function $L\left(s, \operatorname{Sym}^{2} \varphi, \chi\right)$ attached to a holomorphic cuspidal Hilbert modular form $\varphi$, twisted by a finite order Dirichilet character $\chi$. See Section 6.4. Furthermore, for a CM field case we wish to apply Theorem 1.3 to obtain a rationality result for all the critical values of the symmetric-square $L$-function $L\left(s, \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi), \chi\right)$ attached to cohomological cuspidal automorphic representation $\pi$, twisted by a unitary Hecke character $\chi$. This leads us to the following theorem:

Theorem 1.6 Let $\pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{2}, \mu\right)$ with $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{2}\right)$, a 'parallel' dominant integral weight such that for each $v \in S_{\infty}, \mu_{v}=(a,-a ; a,-a)$ for some $a \geq 1$. Let $\chi$ be a unitary algebraic Hecke character of a CM field such that $\chi_{\infty}(z)=(z /|z|)^{-2 t}$ for some $t>0$. Assume that $a \geq t$. Suppose a character $\phi$ is same as defined in Theorem 1.3. Then the critical set consists of integers $m \in[1-t, t]$ and furthermore,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& L_{f}\left(m, \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi) \otimes \chi\right) \\
& \left.\qquad \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\pi, \chi, \phi)} \quad P_{\infty}^{+}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu)\right), m\right) \Omega^{+}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi)\right) c^{+}\left(\phi \chi^{-1}\right) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2} \mathcal{G}(\phi)
\end{aligned}
$$

The proof of the above theorem is given in Section 6.4.
In Chapter 2, we give a dictionary of terminologies which will be needed later to develop the theory. The reader may quickly skim through this chapter to acquaint himself/herself with the notations and cohomological groups we deal with.

In Chapter 3, we begin with a cuspidal automorphic representation on $\mathrm{GL}_{3}$ and an induced representation on $\mathrm{GL}_{2}$ and study their cohomological nature. In Section 3.2 we see the general form of an algebraic Hecke character, which later helps in finding the critical values of $L$-function and defining the induced representation. Furthermore, Sections 3.3 and 3.4 deal with cuspidal cohomology on $\mathrm{GL}_{3}$ and Eisentein cohomology on $\mathrm{GL}_{2}$ respectively.

In Chapter 4, we study the analytic interpretation of $L$-function on $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times$ $\mathrm{GL}_{1}$. In Section 4.1, we attach an $L$-function to a pair of representations on $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{2}$, using Rakin-Selberg integrals. In Section 4.2 we calculate the critical set for $L$-functions on $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}$ in terms of weights associated to representations. Furthermore, we arrange everything for the compatibility of weight systems in Section 4.3.

In Chapter 5, we study the cohomological interpretation of Rankin-Selberg integral, using tools available in chapter 3 and then prove the main identity which relates the $L$-value with the global pairing of cohomology classes. Finally in Chapter 6, we give the Galois equivariant version of both the main theorems followed by an application to the symmetric square $L$-functions, by thinking of the $L$-function on $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}$ as the standard $L$-function of the symmetric-square-which is a cohomological cuspidal representation of $G_{3}$-twisted by an algebraic Hecke character $\chi$.

## Chapter 2

## Preliminaries

### 2.1 Notations and Definitions

- $\mathbb{N}, \mathbb{Z}, \mathbb{Q}$ and $\mathbb{R}$ denote the set of natural numbers, integers, rational numbers, and real numbers, respectively.
- $\mathbb{C}$ denotes the field of complex numbers; for $z \in \mathbb{C}, \Re(z)$ will denote its real part, $|z|$ its absolute value and $\bar{z}$ its complex conjugate.
- For integers $a$ and $b$, define $[a, b]:=\{m \in \mathbb{Z} \mid a \leq m \leq b\}$.
- 11 stands for trivial character.
- The base field. Let $F$ be a number field of degree $d_{F}=[F: \mathbb{Q}]$ with ring of integers $\mathcal{O}=\mathcal{O}_{F}$. For any place $v$ we write $F_{v}$ for the topological completion of $F$ at $v$. Let $S_{\infty}$ be the set of archimedean places of $F$. Let $S_{\infty}:=S_{r} \cup S_{c}$, where $S_{r}$ (resp., $S_{c}$ ) is the set of real (resp., complex) places. Let $\varepsilon_{F}=\operatorname{Hom}(F, \mathbb{C})$ be the set of all embeddings of $F$ as a field into $\mathbb{C}$. There is a canonical surjective map $\varepsilon_{F} \longrightarrow S_{\infty}$, which is a bijection on the real embeddings and real places, and identifies a pair of complex conjugate embeddings $\left\{\iota_{v}, \bar{\iota}_{v}\right\}$ with the complex place $v$. For each $v \in S_{r}$, we fix an isomorphism $F_{v} \cong \mathbb{R}$ which is canonical. Similarly for $v \in S_{c}$, we fix $F_{v} \cong \mathbb{C}$ given by (say) $\iota_{v}$; this choice is not canonical. Let $r_{1}=\left|S_{r}\right|=$ number of real places and $r_{2}=\left|S_{c}\right|=$
number of complex places; hence $d_{F}=r_{1}+2 r_{2}$.
In particular, if we separate the case of totally real and totally imaginary number fields (or CM fields) then:

1. $\mathbf{F}$ is totally real. In this case $S_{\infty}=S_{r}$ and hence $d_{F}=r_{1}$.
2. $\mathbf{F}$ is $\mathbf{C M}$ field. A number field $F$ is a $\mathbf{C M}$ field if it is a totally imaginary quadratic extension $F / F_{0}$ where the base field $F_{0}$ is totally real. Put $\left[F_{0}: \mathbb{Q}\right]=d_{0}$. Then $d_{F}=[F: \mathbb{Q}]=2 d_{0}$. Furthermore, in this case $S_{\infty}=S_{c}$ and hence $d_{F}=2 r_{2}$. This implies $r_{2}=d_{0}$.

Moreover, if $v \notin S_{\infty}$, and $\mathfrak{p}$ denotes the prime ideal of $\mathcal{O}$ corresponding to $v$, then we let $F_{\mathfrak{p}}$ the completion of $F$ at $\mathfrak{p}$, and $\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}$ the ring of integers of $F_{\mathfrak{p}}$. Sometimes, $F_{v}$ is used for $F_{\mathfrak{p}}$ and similarly $\mathcal{O}_{v}$ for $\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}$. The unique maximal ideal of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}$ is $\mathfrak{p} \mathcal{O}_{\mathfrak{p}}$ and is generated by a uniformizer $\varpi_{\mathfrak{p}}$. Let $\mathfrak{D}_{F}$ denote the absolute different of $F$, that is,

$$
\mathfrak{D}_{F}^{-1}=\left\{x \in F: T_{F / \mathbb{Q}}(x \mathcal{O}) \subset \mathbb{Z}\right\} .
$$

For any prime ideal $\mathfrak{p}$ of $F$ define $r_{\mathfrak{p}} \geq 0$ by: $\mathfrak{D}_{F}=\prod_{\mathfrak{p}} \mathfrak{p}^{r_{\mathfrak{p}}}$. Let $\mathbb{A}_{F}$ stand for its adèle ring, with $\mathbb{A}_{F, f}$ and $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times}$the ring of finite adèles and group of idèles, respectively. For brevity, $\mathbb{A}_{\mathbb{Q}}$ will be denoted by $\mathbb{A}$, and similarly, $\mathbb{A}^{\times}$for $\mathbb{A}_{\mathbb{Q}}^{\times}$.

- We let $\left\|\|_{F}: \mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R}_{>0}\right.$ be the adèlic norm of $F$ defined by

$$
\left.\|x\|=\left.\prod_{v-\text { finite ramified }}\left|x_{v}\right|_{v} \prod_{v \in S_{\infty}}\left|x_{v}\right|\right|_{v}: \mathbb{R}\right] .
$$

- Lie groups. The algebraic group $\mathrm{GL}_{n} / F$ will be denoted as $\underline{G}_{n}$, and we put $G_{n}=R_{F / \mathbb{Q}}\left(\underline{G}_{n}\right)$. An $F$-group will be denoted by an underline and the corresponding $\mathbb{Q}$-group via Weil restriction of scalars will be denoted without the underline; hence for any $\mathbb{Q}$-algebra $A$ the group
of $A$-points of $G_{n}$ is $G_{n}(A)=\underline{G}_{n}\left(A \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} F\right)$. Let $\underline{B}_{n}=\underline{T}_{n} \underline{U}_{n}$ stand for the standard Borel subgroup of $\underline{G}_{n}$ of all upper triangular matrices, where $\underline{U}_{n}$ is the unipotent radical of $\underline{B}_{n}$, and $\underline{T}_{n}$ the diagonal torus. The center of $\underline{G}_{n}$ will be denoted by $\underline{Z}_{n}$. These groups define the corresponding $\mathbb{Q}$-groups $G_{n} \supset B_{n}=T_{n} U_{n} \supset Z_{n}$. Observe that $Z_{n}$ is not $\mathbb{Q}$-split, and we let $S_{n}$ be the maximal $\mathbb{Q}$-split torus in $Z_{n}$; we have $S_{n} \cong \mathbb{G}_{m}$ over $\mathbb{Q}$.

Note that the field $F$ at infinity is

$$
F_{\infty}:=F \otimes \mathbb{R} \simeq \prod_{\iota \in \varepsilon_{F}} F_{\iota} \simeq \prod_{v \in S_{r}} \mathbb{R} \times \prod_{v \in S_{c}} \mathbb{C} .
$$

Then the group at infinity is

$$
G_{n, \infty}:=G_{n}(\mathbb{R})=\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}} \mathrm{GL}_{n}\left(F_{v}\right) \cong \prod_{v \in S_{r}} \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{R}) \times \prod_{v \in S_{c}} \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})
$$

We have the center $Z_{n}(\mathbb{R})=\prod_{v \in S_{r}} \mathbb{R}^{\times} \times \prod_{v \in S_{c}} \mathbb{C}^{\times}$, where each copy of $\mathbb{R}^{\times}$(resp., $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$) consists of nonzero scalar matrices in the corresponding copy of $\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ (resp., $\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$ ). The subgroup $S_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ of $Z_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ denotes the split component of center consisting of $\mathbb{R}^{\times}$diagonally embedded in $\prod_{v \in S_{r}} \mathbb{R}^{\times} \times \prod_{v \in S_{c}} \mathbb{C}^{\times}$. Furthermore, suppose $C_{n, \infty}:=\prod_{v \in S_{r}} \mathrm{O}(n) \times$ $\prod_{v \in S_{c}} \mathrm{U}(n)$ be the maximal compact subgroup of $G_{n}(\mathbb{R})$. Put

$$
\begin{aligned}
K_{n, \infty} & =S_{n}(\mathbb{R}) C_{n, \infty} \\
& \cong \mathbb{R}^{\times}\left(\prod_{v \in S_{r}} \mathrm{O}(n) \times \prod_{v \in S_{c}} \mathrm{U}(n)\right) \\
& \cong \mathbb{R}_{+}^{\times}\left(\prod_{v \in S_{r}} \mathrm{O}(n) \times \prod_{v \in S_{c}} \mathrm{U}(n)\right) \\
& =S_{n}(\mathbb{R})^{0} C_{n, \infty},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $S_{n}(\mathbb{R})^{0}$ denotes the topological connected component of the identity of the split component $S_{n}(\mathbb{R})$. Let $K_{n, \infty}^{0}$ be the topological connected component of $K_{n, \infty}$. Hence

$$
K_{n, \infty}^{0}=S_{n}(\mathbb{R})^{0} C_{n, \infty}^{0} \cong \mathbb{R}_{+}^{\times}\left(\prod_{v \in S_{r}} \mathrm{SO}(n) \times \prod_{v \in S_{c}} \mathrm{U}(n)\right)
$$

For any topological group $\mathfrak{G}$, we will let $\pi_{0}(\mathfrak{G}):=\mathfrak{G} / \mathfrak{G}^{0}$ stand for the group of connected components. We will identify

$$
\pi_{0}\left(G_{n, \infty}\right)=\pi_{0}\left(K_{n, \infty}\right) \cong \prod_{v \in S_{\infty}}\{ \pm 1\}=\prod_{v \in S_{r}}\{ \pm\} \times \prod_{v \in S_{c}}\{+\} .
$$

Furthermore, we identify $\pi_{0}\left(G_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ inside $G_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ via the $\delta_{n}^{\prime} s$ where the matrix $\delta_{n}=\operatorname{diag}(-1,1, \ldots, 1)$ represents the nontrivial element in $\mathrm{O}(n) / \mathrm{SO}(n)$. The character group of $\pi_{0}\left(K_{n, \infty}\right)$ is denoted by $\pi_{0} \widehat{\left(K_{n, \infty}\right)}$.

- $\mathcal{M}_{\mu}$ denotes an irreducible finite dimensional complex representation of $G_{n, \infty}$ with highest weight $\mu$.
- Fix a global measure $d g$ on $G_{n}(\mathbb{A})$, which is a product of local measures $d g_{v}$. The local measures are normalized as follows: For a finite place $v$, if $\mathcal{O}_{v}$ is the ring of integers of $F_{v}$, then we assume that $\operatorname{Vol}\left(G_{n}\left(\mathcal{O}_{v}\right)\right)=1$, and at infinity assume that $\operatorname{Vol}\left(C_{n, v}^{0}\right)=1$.
- Lie algebras. For a real Lie group $G$, we denote its Lie algebra by $\mathfrak{g}^{0}$ and the complexified Lie algebra by $\mathfrak{g}$, i.e., $\mathfrak{g}=\mathfrak{g}^{0} \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C}$. Thus, for example, if $G$ is the Lie group $\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ then $\mathfrak{g}^{0}=\mathfrak{g l}_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ and $\mathfrak{g}=\mathfrak{g l}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$. Let $\mathfrak{g}_{n, \infty}$ and $\mathfrak{k}_{n, \infty}$ denoting the complexified Lie algebras of $G_{n, \infty}$ and $K_{n, \infty}$, respectively.
- Let $\iota: \mathrm{GL}_{n-1} \longrightarrow \mathrm{GL}_{n}$ be the map $g \mapsto\left({ }^{g}{ }_{1}\right)$. Then $\iota$ induces a map at the level of local and global groups and between appropriate symmetric spaces of $G_{n-1}$ and $G_{n}$, all of which will also be denoted by $\iota$ again; we hope that this will cause no confusion. The pullback (of a subset, a function, a differential form, or a cohomology class) via $\iota$ will be denoted by $\iota^{*}$.
- We fix, once and for all, a non-trivial, continuous, additive character $\psi: F \backslash \mathbb{A}_{F} \longrightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$. We assume that $\psi_{v}: F_{v}^{+} \longrightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$is unramified for all finite places $v$. That is, if $\mathfrak{D}_{F}=\prod_{\mathfrak{p}} \mathfrak{p}^{r_{\mathfrak{p}}}$, the product running over
all prime ideals $\mathfrak{p} \subset \mathcal{O}$, then the conductor of the local character $\psi_{v}$ is $\mathcal{O}_{v}$, i.e., $\psi_{v}$ is trivial on $\mathcal{O}_{v}$ and non-trivial on $\mathfrak{p}_{v}^{-1} \mathcal{O}_{v}$.
- Gauß sums of Adèlic characters. For a Dirichlet character $\chi$ modulo an integer $N$, following Shimura [39], we define its Gauß sum $\mathfrak{g}(\chi)$ as the Gauß sum of its associated primitive character, say $\chi_{0}$ of conductor $c$, where $\mathfrak{g}\left(\chi_{0}\right)=\sum_{a=0}^{c-1} \chi_{0}(a) e^{2 \pi i a / c}$. For a Hecke character $\xi$ of $F$, by which we mean a continuous homomorphism $\xi: F^{\times} \backslash \mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times} \longrightarrow \mathbb{C}^{*}$, following Weil [44, Chapter VII, Section 7], we define the Gauß sum of $\xi$ as follows: We let $\mathfrak{c}$ stand for the conductor ideal of $\xi_{f}$. Let $y=\left(y_{v}\right)_{v \neq \infty} \in \mathbb{A}_{f}^{\times}$be such that $\operatorname{ord}_{v}\left(y_{v}\right)=-\operatorname{ord}_{v}(\mathfrak{c})$. The Gauß sum of $\xi$ is defined as

$$
\mathcal{G}\left(\xi_{f}, \psi_{f}, y\right)=\prod_{v \neq \infty} \mathcal{G}\left(\xi_{v}, \psi_{v}, y_{v}\right),
$$

where the local Gauß sum $\mathcal{G}\left(\xi_{v}, \psi_{v}, y_{v}\right)$ is defined as

$$
\mathcal{G}\left(\xi_{v}, \psi_{v}, y_{v}\right)=\int_{\mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}} \xi_{v}\left(u_{v}\right)^{-1} \psi_{v}\left(y_{v} u_{v}\right) d u_{v} .
$$

For almost all $v$, where everything in sight is unramified, we have $\mathcal{G}\left(\xi_{v}, \psi_{v}, y_{v}\right)=1$, and for all $v$ we have $\mathcal{G}\left(\xi_{v}, \psi_{v}, y_{v}\right) \neq 0$. Note that, unlike Weil, we do not normalize the Gauß sum to make it have absolute value one and we do not have any factor at infinity. Suppressing the dependence on $\psi$ and $y$, we denote $\mathcal{G}\left(\xi_{f}, \psi_{f}, y\right)$ simply by $\mathcal{G}\left(\xi_{f}\right)$ or even $\mathcal{G}(\xi)$.

- Locally symmetric spaces. (See [16, Section 1.1].) Let $K_{f}$ be an open-compact subgroup of $G_{n}\left(\mathbb{A}_{f}\right)$. Let us write $K_{f}=\prod_{p} K_{p}$ where each $K_{p}$ is an open compact subgroup of $G_{n}\left(\mathbb{Q}_{p}\right)$ and for almost all $p$ we have $K_{p}=\prod_{v \mid p} \mathrm{GL}_{n}\left(\mathcal{O}_{v}\right)$. Define the double-coset space

$$
S_{n}\left(K_{f}\right)=G_{n}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_{n}(\mathbb{A}) / K_{n, \infty}^{0} K_{f}=\mathrm{GL}_{n}(F) \backslash \mathrm{GL}_{n}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right) / K_{n, \infty}^{0} K_{f} .
$$

For brevity, let $K=K_{n, \infty}^{0} K_{f}$, and define

$$
X=G_{n}(\mathbb{A}) / K=G_{n}(\mathbb{R}) / K_{n, \infty}^{0} \times G_{n}\left(\mathbb{A}_{f}\right) K_{f},
$$

i.e., $X$ is the product of the symmetric space $G_{n}(\mathbb{R}) / K_{n, \infty}^{0}$ with a totally disconnected space; any connected component of $X$ is of the form $X_{g}=G_{n}(\mathbb{R})^{0}\left(g_{\infty} ; g_{f}\right) K_{f} / K$ where $g=\left(g_{\infty} ; g_{f}\right) \in G_{n}(\mathbb{A})$ with $g_{\infty} \in \pi_{0}\left(G_{n}(\mathbb{R})\right) \subset G_{n}(\mathbb{R})$. The stabilizer of $X_{g}$ inside $G_{n}(\mathbb{Q})$ is $\Gamma_{g}:=\left\{\gamma \in G_{n}(\mathbb{Q}): \gamma \in G_{n}(\mathbb{R})^{0} \cap g_{f} K_{f} g_{f}^{-1}\right\}$. Any connected component of $S_{n}\left(K_{f}\right)$ is of the form $\Gamma_{g} \backslash X_{g} \cong \Gamma_{g} \backslash G_{n}(\mathbb{R})^{0} / K_{n, \infty}^{0}$. However, $\Gamma_{g}$ does not act freely on $X_{g}$ since $S_{n, \infty} \subset K_{n, \infty}$. Indeed, the stabilizer of every point in $X_{g}$ contains a congruence subgroup $\Delta$ of $S_{n}\left(\mathcal{O}_{F}\right)$; this $\Delta$ is independent of the point in $X_{g}$, but the congruence conditions on $\Delta$ depend on $K_{f}$. The group $\bar{\Gamma}_{g}=\Gamma_{g} / \Delta$ acts freely on $X_{g}$ and the quotient $\bar{\Gamma}_{g} \backslash X_{g}$ is a locally symmetric space. We will abuse terminology and sometimes refer to $S_{n}\left(K_{f}\right)$ as a locally symmetric space of $G_{n}$ with level structure $K_{f}$.

Similarly, define

$$
\tilde{S}_{n}\left(K_{f}\right):=G_{n}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_{n}(\mathbb{A}) / C_{n, \infty}^{0} K_{f}=\mathrm{GL}_{n}(F) \backslash \mathrm{GL}_{n}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right) / C_{n, \infty}^{0} K_{f}
$$

where $C_{n, \infty}^{0}$ is the connected component of the identity of the maximal compact subgroup $C_{n, \infty}$ of $G_{n}(\mathbb{R})$. We get a canonical fibration $\phi$ given by:


- Automorphic representations. An irreducible representation of $G_{n}(\mathbb{A})=\mathrm{GL}_{n}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)$ is said to be automorphic, following Borel-Jacquet [4], if it is isomorphic to an irreducible subquotient of the representation of $G_{n}(\mathbb{A})$ on its space of automorphic forms. We say an automorphic representation is cuspidal if it is a subrepresentation of the representation of $G_{n}(\mathbb{A})$ on the space of cusp forms $\mathcal{A}_{\text {cusp }}\left(G_{n}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_{n}(\mathbb{A})\right)=$ $\mathcal{A}_{\text {cusp }}\left(\mathrm{GL}_{n}(F) \backslash \mathrm{GL}_{n}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)\right)$. Let $V_{\pi}$ be the subspace of cusp forms re-
alizing a cuspidal automorphic representation $\pi$. For an automorphic representation $\pi$ of $G_{n}(\mathbb{A})$, we have $\pi=\pi_{\infty} \otimes \pi_{f}$, where $\pi_{\infty}$ is a representation of $G_{n, \infty}$ and $\pi_{f}=\otimes_{v \notin S_{\infty}} \pi_{v}$ is a representation of $G_{n}\left(\mathbb{A}_{f}\right)$. The central character of $\pi$ will be denoted $\omega_{\pi}$.
- Rationality field of $\pi$. Given $\pi$, suppose $V$ is the representation space of $\pi_{f}$, any $\sigma \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ defines a representation $\pi_{f}^{\sigma}$ on $V \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \mathbb{C}_{\sigma^{-1}}$ where $G_{n}\left(\mathbb{A}_{f}\right)$ acts on the first factor. Let $S\left(\pi_{f}\right)$ be the subgroup of $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ consisting of all $\sigma$ such that $\pi_{f}^{\sigma} \simeq \pi_{f}$. Define the rationality field $\mathbb{Q}\left(\pi_{f}\right)$ of $\pi_{f}$ as the subfield of $\mathbb{C}$ fixed by $S\left(\pi_{f}\right)$; we denote this as $\mathbb{Q}(\pi) \equiv \mathbb{Q}\left(\pi_{f}\right)=\mathbb{C}^{S\left(\pi_{f}\right)}$. (See [32] for details.)
- The finite part of a global $L$-function attached to a representation $\pi$ is denoted by $L_{f}(s, \pi)$ and for any place $v$ the local $L$-factor at $v$ is denoted by $L\left(s, \pi_{v}\right)$.


### 2.2 Various Cohomologies

- Relative Lie algebra cohomology. (See Borel-Wallach [5] for details.) If V is a $\mathfrak{g}$-module, and $q \in \mathbb{N}$, then

$$
C^{q}=C^{q}(\mathfrak{g} ; V)=\operatorname{Hom}_{F}\left(\wedge^{q} \mathfrak{g}, V\right),
$$

and $d: C^{q} \longrightarrow C^{q+1}$ is defined as

$$
\begin{aligned}
d f\left(x_{0}, \ldots, x_{q}\right) & =\sum_{j}(-1)^{j} x_{j} \cdot f\left(x_{0}, \ldots, \hat{x_{j}}, \ldots, x_{q}\right) \\
& +\sum_{j<k}(-1)^{j+k} f\left(\left[x_{j}, x_{k}\right], x_{0}, \ldots, \hat{x_{j}}, \ldots, \hat{x_{k}}, \ldots, x_{q}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Here a hat over an argument means that it is omitted. An elementary calculation shows that $d$ intertwines the action of $\mathfrak{g}$, and that $d^{2}=0$. Furthermore, to $x \in \mathfrak{g}$ there is associated an endomorphism $\theta_{x}$ of $C^{q}$ and a linear map $i_{x}: C^{q} \longrightarrow C^{q-1}$ defined by

$$
\left(\theta_{x} f\right)\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{q}\right)=\sum_{j} f\left(x_{1}, \ldots,\left[x_{j}, x\right], \ldots, x_{q}\right)+x \cdot f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{q}\right)
$$

$$
\left(i_{x} f\right)\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{q-1}\right)=f\left(x, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{q-1}\right)
$$

Let $C^{q}(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{k}, V)$ be the subspace of $C^{q}(\mathfrak{g}, V)$ consisting of the elements annihilated by the maps $i_{x}$ and $\theta_{x}$ for all $x \in \mathfrak{k}$. Then $C^{q}(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{k}, V)$ is stable under the map $d$ and we have

$$
C^{q}(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{k} ; V)=\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathfrak{k}}\left(\wedge^{q}(\mathfrak{g} / \mathfrak{k}), V\right),
$$

where the action of $\mathfrak{k}$ on $\wedge^{q}(\mathfrak{g} / \mathfrak{k})$ is induced by the adjoint representation.

The cohomology groups of complex $C^{q}(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{k} ; V)$ are the relative lie algebra cohomology groups $H^{q}(\mathfrak{g}, K ; V)$ of $\mathfrak{g} \bmod \mathfrak{k}$, with coefficients in $V$, where $K$ is the connected subgroup such that $\operatorname{Lie}(K)=\mathfrak{k}$. We are interested in the cohomology groups: $H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{n, \infty}, K_{n, \infty}^{0} ; V\right)$.

Observe that if $K_{0}$ is a normal subgroup of $K$, since $K$ acts on the space $\operatorname{Hom}\left(\wedge^{\bullet}(\mathfrak{g} / \mathfrak{k}), V\right)$, this implies $K / K_{0}$ acts $\operatorname{Hom}\left(\wedge^{\bullet}(\mathfrak{g} / \mathfrak{k}), V\right)^{K_{0}}=$ $\operatorname{Hom}_{K_{0}}\left(\wedge^{\bullet}(\mathfrak{g} / \mathfrak{k}), V\right)$. Here $K^{0}$ is a topological connected component of K

- Sheaf cohomology. (Reference: see Harder-Raghuram [17]) Given a dominant-integral weight $\mu \in X^{+}\left(T_{n}\right)$ and the associated representation $\mathcal{M}_{\mu, E}$, where $E$ is an extension of $\mathbb{Q}(\mu)$, we get a sheaf $\widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu, E}$ of $E$-vector spaces on symmetric space $S_{G_{n}}\left(K_{f}\right)$ as follows: Let $\pi: G_{n}(\mathbb{A}) / K_{n, \infty}^{0} K_{f} \rightarrow S_{n}\left(K_{f}\right)$ be the canonical projection. For any open subset $U$ of $S_{n}\left(K_{f}\right)$ define the sections over $U$ by:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu}(U):=\left\{s: \pi^{-1}(U) \rightarrow \mathcal{M}_{\mu, E} \mid s\right. \text { is locally constant, and } \\
& \left.\qquad s(\gamma u)=\rho_{\mu}(\gamma) s(u) ; \forall \gamma \in G_{n}(\mathbb{Q}), u \in \pi^{-1}(U)\right\},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\rho_{\mu}$ is the finite dimensional representation of $G_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ with highest weight $\mu$. This defines a sheaf of complex vector spaces on $S_{n}\left(K_{f}\right)$. Note that even if $\mathcal{M}_{\mu, E} \neq 0$ it is possible that the sheaf $\widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu, E}=0$.
(See Harder [16, 1.1.3].) Indeed, $\widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu, E}=0$ unless the central character of $\rho_{\mu}$ has the infinity type of an algebraic Hecke character of $F$. We are interested in the sheaf cohomology groups

$$
H^{\bullet}\left(S_{n}\left(K_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu, E}\right) .
$$

It is convenient to pass to the limit over all open-compact subgroups $K_{f}$ and let $H^{\bullet}\left(S_{n}, \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu, E}\right):=\lim _{K_{f}} H^{\bullet}\left(S_{n}\left(K_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu, E}\right)$. There is an action of $\pi_{0}\left(G_{n, \infty}\right) \times G_{n}\left(\mathbb{A}_{f}\right)$ on $H^{\bullet}\left(S_{n}, \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu, E}\right)$, and the cohomology of $S_{n}\left(K_{f}\right)$ is obtained by taking invariants under $K_{f}$, i.e.,

$$
H^{\bullet}\left(S_{n}\left(K_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu, E}\right)=H^{\bullet}\left(S_{n}, \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu, E}\right)^{K_{f}}
$$

Working at a transcendental level, i.e., taking $E=\mathbb{C}$, we can compute the above sheaf cohomology via the de Rham complex, and then reinterpreting the de Rham complex in terms of the complex computing relative Lie algebra cohomology, we get the isomorphism:

$$
H^{\bullet}\left(S_{n}, \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu}\right) \simeq H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{n, \infty}, K_{n, \infty}^{0} ; C^{\infty}\left(G_{n}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_{n}(\mathbb{A})\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right) .
$$

With level structure $K_{f}$ it takes the form:

$$
H^{\bullet}\left(S_{n}\left(K_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu}\right) \simeq H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{n, \infty}, K_{n, \infty}^{0} ; C^{\infty}\left(G_{n}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_{n}(\mathbb{A})\right)^{K_{f}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right)
$$

We will also consider the cohomology groups $H^{\bullet}\left(\tilde{S}_{n}\left(K_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu}\right)$.

- Cuspidal cohomology. The inclusion

$$
C_{\text {cusp }}^{\infty}\left(G_{n}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_{n}(\mathbb{A})\right) \hookrightarrow C^{\infty}\left(G_{n}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_{n}(\mathbb{A})\right)
$$

of the space of smooth cusp forms in the space of all smooth functions induces, via results of Borel [3], an injection in cohomology; this defines cuspidal cohomology:

$$
H_{\mathrm{cusp}}^{\bullet}\left(S_{n}\left(K_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu}\right) \simeq H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{n}, K_{n, \infty}^{0} ; C_{\mathrm{cusp}}^{\infty}\left(G_{n}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_{n}(\mathbb{A})\right)^{K_{f}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right) .
$$

Using the usual decomposition of the space of cusp forms into a direct sum of cuspidal automorphic representations, we get the following fundamental decomposition of $\pi_{0}\left(G_{n, \infty}\right) \times G_{n}\left(\mathbb{A}_{f}\right)$-modules:

$$
H_{\text {cusp }}^{\bullet}\left(S_{n}, \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu}\right)=\bigoplus_{\Pi} H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{n}, K_{n, \infty}^{0} ; \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right) \otimes \Pi_{f}
$$

We say that $\Pi$ contributes to the cuspidal cohomology of $G_{n}$ with coefficients in $\mathcal{M}_{\mu}$ if $\Pi$ has a nonzero contribution to the above decomposition. Equivalently, if $\Pi$ is a cuspidal automorphic representation whose representation at infinity $\Pi_{\infty}$ after twisting by $\mathcal{M}_{\mu}$ has nontrivial relative Lie algebra cohomology, i.e., $H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{n}, K_{n, \infty}^{0} ; \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right) \neq 0$ for some •. In this situation, we write $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{n}, \mu\right)$. It is well known (see [9]) that only pure weights support cuspidal cohomology.

## Chapter 3

## Representation Theory and Cohomology

### 3.1 Finite dimensional representations

Consider $T_{n, \infty}=\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}} T_{n}\left(F_{v}\right)$. Let $X^{*}\left(T_{n}\right)=X^{*}\left(T_{n, \infty}\right)$ be the group of all algebraic characters of $T_{n, \infty}$, and let $X^{+}\left(T_{n}\right)=X^{+}\left(T_{n, \infty}\right)$ be the subset of $X^{*}\left(T_{n, \infty}\right)$ which are dominant integral with respect to Borel subgroup $B_{n}$. A weight $\mu \in X^{+}\left(T_{n, \infty}\right)$ is described as follows: $\mu=\left(\mu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$, where

- For $v \in S_{r}$, we have $\mu_{v}=\left(\mu_{1}^{v}, \ldots, \mu_{n}^{v}\right), \mu_{i}^{v} \in \mathbb{Z}, \mu_{1}^{v} \geq \ldots \geq \mu_{n}^{v}$, and the character $\mu_{v}$ sends $t=\operatorname{diag}\left(t_{1}, \ldots, t_{n}\right) \in T_{n}\left(F_{v}\right)$ to $\prod_{i} t_{i}^{\mu_{i}^{v}}$.
- If $v \in S_{c}$ then $\mu_{v}$ is the pair $\left(\mu^{\iota_{v}}, \mu^{\tau_{v}}\right)$, with $\mu^{\iota_{v}}=\left(\mu_{1}^{\iota_{v}}, \cdots, \mu_{n}^{\iota_{v}}\right), \mu_{i}^{\iota_{v}} \in$ $\mathbb{Z}, \mu_{1}^{\iota_{v}} \geq \cdots \geq \mu_{n}^{\iota_{v}}$; likewise $\mu^{\bar{\tau}_{v}}=\left(\mu_{1}^{\bar{\tau}_{v}}, \cdots, \mu_{n}^{\bar{\tau}_{v}}\right)$ and $\mu_{1}^{\bar{\tau}_{v}} \geq \cdots \geq \mu_{n}^{\tau_{v}}$; the character $\mu_{v}$ is given by sending

$$
t=\operatorname{diag}\left(z_{1}, \cdots, z_{n}\right) \in T_{n}\left(F_{v}\right) \text { to } \prod_{i=1}^{n} z_{i}^{\mu^{\mu_{v}}} \bar{z}_{i}^{\mu^{\mu_{v}}}
$$

where $\bar{z}_{i}$ is the complex conjugate of $z_{i}$.
Furthermore, if there is an integer $w(\mu)$ such that
(1) For $v \in S_{r}$ and $1 \leq i \leq n$ we have $\mu_{i}^{v}+\mu_{n-i+1}^{v}=\mathrm{w}(\mu)$;
(2) For $v \in S_{c}$ and $1 \leq i \leq n$ we have $\mu_{i}^{\bar{\tau}_{v}}+\mu_{n-i+1}^{\iota_{v}}=\mathrm{w}(\mu)$,
then we call such a weight $\mu$ a pure weight and call $\mathrm{w}(\mu)$ the purity weight of $\mu$.
We denote the set of dominant integral pure weights as $X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{n}\right)=X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{n, \infty}\right)$. Furthermore, take an integer $b$ and integers $a_{1} \geq a_{2} \geq \cdots \geq a_{n}$ such that

$$
a_{j}+a_{n-j+1}=b ;
$$

now for each $v \in S_{\infty}$ put $\mu_{v}=\left(a_{1}, \cdots, a_{n}\right)$; then $\mu$ is pure with $\mathrm{w}(\mu)=b$. Such a weight is called a parallel weight.

For $\mu \in X^{+}\left(T_{n, \infty}\right)$, we define $\left(\rho_{\mu}, \mathcal{M}_{\mu, \mathbb{C}}\right)$ an irreducible finite dimensional complex representation of $G_{n, \infty}$ with highest weight $\mu$ as follows: Since $G_{n, \infty}=\prod_{v \in S_{r}} \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{R}) \times \prod_{v \in S_{c}} \mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$, it is clear that

$$
\left(\rho_{\mu}, \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right)=\left(\otimes_{v} \rho_{\mu_{v}}, \otimes_{v} \mathcal{M}_{\mu_{v}}\right)
$$

such that for $v \in S_{r},\left(\otimes_{v} \rho_{\mu_{v}}, \otimes_{v} \mathcal{M}_{\mu_{v}}\right)$ being the irreducible finite dimensional representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{R})$ of highest weight $\mu_{v}$, and $v \in S_{c},\left(\otimes_{v} \rho_{\mu_{v}}, \otimes_{v} \mathcal{M}_{\mu_{v}}\right)$ is the complex representation of the real algebraic group $G\left(F_{v}\right)=\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$ defined as $\rho_{\mu_{v}}(g)=\rho_{\mu^{\iota_{v}}}(g) \otimes \rho_{\mu^{\tau_{v}}}(\bar{g})$; here $\rho_{\mu^{\iota_{v}}}$ (resp., $\left.\rho_{\mu^{\bar{\tau}_{v}}}\right)$ is the irreducible representation $\mathcal{M}_{\mu^{\iota} v}$ (resp., $\mathcal{M}_{\mu^{\tau_{v}}}$ ) of the complex group $\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{C})$ with highest weight $\mu^{\iota_{v}}$ (resp., $\mu^{\bar{\tau}_{v}}$ ).

### 3.2 Algebraic Hecke Characters

(See Weil [43] for more details.) Recall $\mathbb{A}_{F}$ is the adèle ring of $F$, and $\mathbb{I}_{F}=\mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times}$ is the group of idèles of $F$. Let $E$ be the group of all units $\varepsilon$ in $F$ and $C_{F}=\mathbb{I}_{F} / F^{\times}$denotes the idèle class group of $F$.

Definition. A Hecke character is a continuous homomorphism

$$
\chi: \mathbb{I}_{F} / F^{\times} \longrightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times} .
$$

Recall the norm map $\left\|\|\right.$ of an idèle $\alpha \in \mathbb{I}_{F}$ which is defined as

$$
\|\alpha\|=\prod_{v}\left|\alpha_{v}\right|_{v}
$$

where all the valuations are normalized valuations. Then $\mathbb{I}_{F} / F^{\times} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R}_{+}^{\times}$is a surjective homomorphism with kernel $=:{ }^{0} \mathbb{I}_{F}$. Clearly $F^{\times} \subset{ }^{0} \mathbb{I}_{F}$. We have the following exact sequence

$$
0 \longrightarrow{ }^{0} \mathbb{I}_{F} / F^{\times} \longrightarrow \mathbb{I}_{F} / F^{\times} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R}_{+}^{\times} \longrightarrow 0
$$

This sequence splits. For example, two of the splittings are given by mapping $t \in \mathbb{R}_{+}^{\times}$into the idéle which is $t$ at a particular real infinite place and 1 elsewhere, or by mapping $t$ to $t^{1 / 2}$ at a particular complex infinite place and 1 elsewhere. This splitting gives

$$
\mathbb{I}_{F} / F^{\times} \simeq{ }^{0} \mathbb{I}_{F} / F^{\times} \times \mathbb{R}_{+}^{\times}
$$

It is a fundamental fact that ${ }^{0} \mathbb{I}_{F} / F^{\times}$is compact (Neukirch [27, Theorem VI. 1.6]). A continuous homomorphism of ${ }^{0} \mathbb{I}_{F} / F^{\times}$into $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$has compact image and so lands in $S^{1}$. Furthermore, any homomorphism $\mathbb{R}_{+}^{\times} \longrightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$is of the form $x \longmapsto|x|^{w}$ for a complex number $w=\sigma+i \varphi$. Putting these remarks together, any Hecke character $\chi$ can be uniquely factored as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi=\chi^{\circ} \otimes\| \|^{\sigma} \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\chi^{\circ}: \mathbb{I}_{F} / F^{\times} \longrightarrow S^{1}$ is a unitary Hecke character and $\sigma \in \mathbb{R}$.

## The character at infinity of a Hecke character:

- Characters of $\mathbb{R}^{\times}$. Any continuous homomorphism $\chi: \mathbb{R}^{\times} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$is of the form

$$
\chi(x)=\operatorname{sgn}(x)^{-f}|x|^{w}=\left(\frac{x}{|x|}\right)^{-f}|x|^{w}
$$

with $f \in\{0,1\}$ and $w \in \mathbb{C}$. Such a character $\chi$ is unitary if and only if $w=i \varphi \in i \mathbb{R}$.

- Characters of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$. First let us note that for $z=x+i y \in \mathbb{C}$, its normalized real absolute value is defined as $|z|:=|z|_{\mathbb{R}}:=\sqrt{x^{2}+y^{2}}$ and its
normalized complex absolute value is $|z|_{\mathbb{C}}:=|z|_{\mathbb{R}}^{2}=x^{2}+y^{2}$. Any continuous homomorphism $\chi: \mathbb{C}^{\times} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$is of the form

$$
\chi(z)=\left(\frac{z}{|z|}\right)^{-f}|z|_{\mathbb{C}}^{w}
$$

with $f \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $w \in \mathbb{C}$. Such a character $\chi$ is unitary if and only if $w=i \varphi \in i \mathbb{R}$.

- Description of $\chi_{\infty}$. For a Hecke character $\chi$, let $\chi_{\infty}=\left.\chi\right|_{F_{\infty}^{\times}}$where $F_{\infty}^{\times} \hookrightarrow$ $\mathbb{I}_{F}$. We want to describe this character explicitly. We will use the following notations: $\lambda$ is any infinite place; $\lambda \in S_{\infty}, \rho$ is any real place; $\rho \in S_{r}$ and $F_{\rho} \simeq \mathbb{R}$ canonically, and $\iota$ is any complex place; $\iota \in S_{c}$ and $F_{\iota} \simeq \mathbb{C}$ non-canonically. Further $\left|x_{\infty}\right|_{\infty}=\prod_{\lambda}\left|x_{\lambda}\right|_{\lambda}$ for $x_{\infty} \in F_{\infty}$ is the product of normalized valuations. Keep in mind that a Hecke character factorizes as $\chi=\chi^{\circ} \otimes\| \|^{\sigma}$; see Equation (3.1). We can write the character at infinity $\chi_{\infty}$ on $x_{\infty} \in F_{\infty}^{\times}$as

$$
\chi_{\infty}\left(x_{\infty}\right)=\left(\prod_{\lambda \in S_{\infty}}\left(\frac{x_{\lambda}}{\left|x_{\lambda}\right|}\right)^{-f_{\lambda}}\left|x_{\lambda}\right|_{\lambda}^{i \varphi_{\lambda}}\right)\left|x_{\infty}\right|_{\infty}^{\sigma},
$$

where $f_{\rho} \in\{0,1\}, f_{\iota} \in \mathbb{Z}, \varphi_{\lambda} \in \mathbb{R}$ and $\sigma \in \mathbb{R}$.
Using above description of $\chi$ at infinity one can classify all finite order characters (say $\chi^{0}$ ): A character $\chi^{0}$ of $C_{F}$ is of finite order if and only if it is 1 on the connected component of identity in $\mathbb{I}_{F}$, that is, if and only if $f_{\iota}=0$ for all complex places $\iota, \varphi_{\lambda}=0$ for all infinite places $\lambda$, and $\sigma=0$. This implies, for example, a finite order character on $\mathbb{R}^{\times}$will be either $\mathbb{1}$ or sgn and a finite order character on $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$is always $\mathbb{1}$.

After classifying finite order characters, we want to classify Hecke characters $\chi$ (given by Equation (3.1)): Following Weil, given $f_{\lambda}$ and $\sigma$, a necessary and sufficient condition for the existence of a character $\chi$ is that there should be
an integer $m$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\prod_{\lambda \in S_{\infty}}\left(\varepsilon_{\lambda} /\left|\varepsilon_{\lambda}\right|\right)^{m f_{\lambda}}=1 \Longrightarrow \prod_{\lambda \in S_{\infty}}\left(\varepsilon_{\lambda} / \bar{\varepsilon}_{\lambda}\right)^{m f_{\lambda}}=1, \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $\varepsilon \in E$. The last equation is obtained by replacing $m$ by $2 m$.
Clearly, if $F$ is a totally real number field, then Equation (3.2) always holds. Further if $F$ is a CM field, that is, totally imaginary quadratic extension of a totally real number field $F_{0}$, then, by Dirichlet's theorem $\varepsilon^{m}$ is totally real for every $\varepsilon \in E$ because the group $E_{0}$ of the units in $F_{0}$ is of finite index in $E$ and take $m$ to be that index. Hence Equation (3.2) holds on $E$ for that value of $m$ and for arbitrary values of $f_{\iota}$. It implies then for a CM field, character $\chi$ exists.

Note: The above argument may not work in the case of totally imaginary fields, i.e., for all $\varepsilon \in E, \varepsilon^{m}$ need not be totally real. For a totally imaginary field $F$, it may happen that there does not exist any totally real field say $F_{r}$ between $F$ and $\mathbb{Q}$ such that necessary condition Equation (3.2) holds. For example take $F=\mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{2}+i \sqrt{3})$. Its easy to check that $F$ is totally imaginary number field of degree 4 , which is not a CM field as $\mathbb{Q}(i \sqrt{6})$ is the only proper subfield of $F$. Hence we work with CM fields only.

We say that $\chi$ is of type(A) if all the $\varphi_{\lambda}$ are 0 and $\sigma$ is rational. In order for a field to have non-trivial characters of type(A), it is necessary and sufficient that it should contain a totally imaginary quadratic extension $F_{1}$ of its maximal totally real subfield $F_{0}$, for example, $F$ is CM field with $F=F_{1}$. Otherwise $F$ will have trivial characters.

A trivial algebraic Hecke character is a trivial character of type(A), which is the form $\chi^{0}\| \|^{m}$, with $\chi^{0}$ of finite order and $m$ an integer. If $F$ is a totally real number field, then $F$ will have only trivial algebraic Hecke characters.

Hence an algebraic Hecke character of a totally real field looks like

$$
\chi=\chi^{0}\| \|^{m},
$$

with $m \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $\chi^{0}$ a finite order Dirichlet character.

A non-trivial algebraic Hecke character is a non-trivial character of type(A) for which $2 \sigma$ is an integer and $f_{\lambda} \equiv 2 \sigma(\bmod 2)$ for all $\lambda$. Hence an algebraic Hecke character of a CM field looks like

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi=\chi^{1}\| \|^{\sigma}, \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

with a unitary character $\chi^{1}$ whose infinity part is

$$
\chi_{\infty}^{1}\left(x_{\infty}\right)=\prod_{\lambda}\left(x_{\lambda} /\left|x_{\lambda}\right|\right)^{-f_{\lambda}}
$$

such that $f_{\lambda} \equiv 2 \sigma(\bmod 2)$ for some $f_{\lambda} \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $\sigma \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$. According to Weil, such characters are called characters of type $\left(\mathbf{A}_{0}\right)$.

Note. In this thesis, unless otherwise mention, for CM case we deal with algebraic Hecke characters of type $\left(\mathrm{A}_{0}\right)$ with parallel weight. Hence under this assumption, an algebraic Hecke character $\chi$ of a CM field looks like:

$$
\chi=\chi^{1}\| \|^{\sigma},
$$

with a unitary character $\chi^{1}$ whose infinity part is

$$
\chi_{\infty}^{1}\left(x_{\infty}\right)=\prod_{\lambda}\left(x_{\lambda} /\left|x_{\lambda}\right|\right)^{-f}=\left(\frac{x_{\infty}}{\left|x_{\infty}\right|}\right)^{-f}
$$

such that $f \equiv 2 \sigma(\bmod 2)$ for some $f \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $\sigma \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$.
Fact 3.4 If a character $\chi$ of the idèle class group $C_{\mathbb{F}}$ of the field $F$ is of type $\left(A_{0}\right)$, then the coefficients of the Hecke L-series associated with $\chi$ lie in a finite algebraic extension of $\mathbb{Q}$; we denote this field as $\mathbb{Q}(\chi)$ and it is described below.

## More facts:

- Assume that F has at least one real place. Define the signature $\varepsilon_{\chi}$ of an algebraic Hecke character $\chi$ as follows: By the purity constraint, with purity weight w , the character $\chi^{0}:=\chi\| \|^{-\mathrm{w}(\chi)}$ is a character of finite order. For $v \in S_{r}$, define

$$
\varepsilon_{\chi_{v}}=(-1)^{\mathrm{w}} \chi_{v}^{0}(-1) .
$$

Now put $\varepsilon_{\chi}=\left(\varepsilon_{\chi_{v}}\right)_{v \in S_{r}}$. The signature is an $r_{1}$-tuple of signs indexed by real embeddings of F . This implies when $F$ is a CM field, no signature appears because a finite order character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$is always trivial.

- For each finite place $v$ and any smooth character $\omega_{v}: F_{v}^{\times} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$, define the rationality field $\mathbb{Q}\left(\omega_{v}\right)$ of $\omega_{v}$ as the field obtained by adjoining the values of $\omega_{v}$ to $\mathbb{Q}$. For an algebraic Hecke character $\chi$, we define its rationality field $\mathbb{Q}(\chi)$ as the compositum of the fields $\mathbb{Q}\left(\chi_{v}\right)$ for all finite places $v$ that are unramified for $\chi$. Then $\mathbb{Q}(\chi)$ is a number field, and the field $\mathbb{Q}(\chi)$ need not contain the field $F$.


## Critical values of an algebraic Hecke character.

1. $\chi$ is a finite order Dirichlet character. Let $\chi$ be a Dirichlet character $\bmod m$ with $\chi(-1)=(-1)^{p}$, where $p \in\{0,1\}$. The following results hold for the special values of $L$-function attached to $\chi$ (see Neukirch [27, Chapter 7] for details):

- For any integer $k \geq 1$, one has

$$
\begin{equation*}
L(1-k, \chi)=-\frac{B_{k, \chi}}{k} \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $B_{k, \chi}$ is the generalized Bernoulli number.

- For $k \equiv p(\bmod 2), k \geq 1$, one has

$$
\begin{equation*}
L(k, \chi)=(-1)^{1+\frac{k-p}{2}} \frac{\mathcal{G}(\chi)}{2 i^{p}}\left(\frac{2 \pi}{m}\right)^{k} \frac{B_{k, \bar{\chi}}}{k} . \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

2. $\chi$ is a unitary Hecke character of a CM field. Let $\chi$ be an algebraic Hecke character of $F^{\times}$such that $\chi_{\infty}\left(z_{\infty}\right)=\left(\frac{z_{\infty}}{\left|z_{\infty}\right|}\right)^{-f}$ for $f \in \mathbb{Z}$ and for all $z_{\infty} \in \mathbb{C}^{r_{2}}$. Using Section 3.2, it is clear that $f \equiv 0(\bmod 2)$, that is, $f$ is an even integer. Put $f=2 a ; a \in \mathbb{Z}$. Rewriting the character at infinity we get:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\chi_{\infty}\left(z_{\infty}\right) & =\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}}\left(\frac{z_{v}}{\left|z_{v}\right|}\right)^{-2 a} \\
& =\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}} z_{v}^{-2 a}\left|z_{v}\right|^{2 a} \\
& =\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}} z_{v}^{-2 a+a} \bar{z}_{v}^{a}=r_{2} \cdot\left(z_{v}^{-a} \bar{z}_{v}^{a}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $L(s, \chi)$ be the Hecke $L$-function attached to character $\chi$. Then the infinite part of $L$-value is

$$
L_{\infty}(s, \chi)=\prod_{v \in S_{c}} L\left(s, \chi_{v}\right)=r_{2} \cdot(2(2 \pi) \Gamma(s+|a|))
$$

Similarly the Hecke $L$-factor associated with $\chi^{\vee}$ is

$$
L_{\infty}\left(1-s, \chi^{\vee}\right)=\prod_{v \in S_{c}} L\left(1-s, \chi_{v}^{\vee}\right)=\prod_{v \in S_{c}} 2(2 \pi) \Gamma(1-s+|a|) .
$$

An integer $m$ is critical if for all $v \in S_{c}$ the Gamma factors $\Gamma(s+|a|)$ and $\Gamma(1-s+|a|)$ have no poles, that is,

$$
m+|a| \geq 1 ; \quad \text { and } \quad 1-m+|a| \geq 1
$$

On simplifying we get:

$$
\begin{equation*}
m \in \mathbb{Z} \text { is critical if and only if }\{1-|a| \leq m \leq|a|\} . \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Fact 3.8 Blasius [2] proved that Deligne's conjecture [11, Conjecture 2.8] (which relates critical values of a motivic L-function $L(s, M)$ to certain motivic periods) holds for a motive $M(\chi)$ (of pure weight w)
attached to an algebraic Hecke character $\chi$ over CM fields. It is stated as follows: If $s$ is critical for the L-function attached to an algebraic Hecke character $\chi$ over a CM field $F$, then

$$
\frac{L_{f}(s, \chi)}{c^{+}\left(\chi\|\cdot\|^{s}\right)} \in \mathbb{Q}(\chi) \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{C}
$$

where $c^{+}\left(\chi\|\cdot\|^{s}\right)=(2 \pi i)^{\frac{s[F: \mathbb{Q}]}{2}} c^{(-1)^{s}}(\chi)$. Here $c^{ \pm}$are the motivic periods introduced by Deligne and $\mathbb{Q}(\chi)$ is a number field as in Fact 3.4. (See also [37].) Moreover $M(\chi)$ has no $\left(\frac{w}{2}, \frac{w}{2}\right)$-classes unless $F$ is totally real and hence using ([18], for example) $c^{+}(\chi) \sim_{\mathbb{Q}(\chi)} c^{-}(\chi)$.

### 3.3 Cuspidal Cohomological representations of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}$

Let $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3, \infty}\right)$ be a pure weight, and let $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$. The purpose of this section is to first write down explicitly the representation $\Pi_{\infty}$ in terms of $\mu$. Since $\Pi_{\infty}=\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}} \Pi_{v}$, if we have local representations at hand then the problem of describing $\Pi_{\infty}$ is a purely local one. This helps in computing the set of critical points of Rankin-Selberg $L$-functions. Secondly, we study the connection of representation $\Pi_{\infty}$ with cohomology groups $H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{0} ; \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right)$, giving the possible degrees in which one has nontrivial cuspidal cohomology. This permits us to give a cohomological interpretation to Rankin-Selberg $L$-functions. We begin by taking up real and complex places separately. Before that we make the following observation:

- The group $K_{3, \infty} / K_{3, \infty}^{0}=(\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z})^{r_{1}}$ acts on $H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{0} ; \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right)$. We consider certain isotypic components for this action. Consider an $r_{1}$ tuple of signs indexed by the set $S_{r}$ of real places in $S_{\infty}$. Let

$$
\epsilon=\left(\epsilon_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{r}} \in\{\mathbb{1}, \operatorname{sgn}\}^{r_{1}}=\left(K_{3, \infty} / K_{3, \infty}^{0}\right)^{\wedge} .
$$

When $F$ is totally real field, $\Pi$ uniquely determines $\epsilon$, and when $F$ is a CM field then no sign appears as $F$ has no real place. For later use let $H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{0} ; \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right)\left(\epsilon_{\Pi}\right)$ be the corresponding isotypic component.

### 3.3.1 Cohomological representations of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{R})$

We review some well known details that will be relevant later on. (See [29] for more details and further references.) For any integer $\ell \geq 1$, let $D_{\ell}$ stand for the discrete series representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{2}(\mathbb{R})$ with lowest non-negative $\mathrm{SO}(2)$ type given by the character $\left(\begin{array}{c}\cos \theta-\sin \theta \\ \sin \theta \\ \cos \theta\end{array}\right) \mapsto \exp ^{-i(\ell+1) \theta}$, and central character $a \mapsto \operatorname{sgn}(a)^{\ell+1}$.

Suppose $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3}\right)$ is a pure dominant integral weight written as $\mu=$ $\left(\mu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$ with $\mu_{v}=\left(\mu_{1}^{v}, \mu_{2}^{v}, \mu_{3}^{v}\right)$ and let $\mathrm{w}=\mu_{1}^{v}+\mu_{3}^{v}=2 \mu_{2}^{v}$ be the purity weight of $\mu$. Note that w is an even integer. Let's write it as $\mathrm{w}=: 2 \mathrm{w}^{\circ}=2 \mu_{2}^{v}$. Suppose $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$, then it is clear that

$$
\Pi \otimes\left\|\|^{w^{\circ}} \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu-\mathrm{w}^{\circ}\right)\right.
$$

because

$$
H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{0} ; \Pi_{\infty} \otimes\| \|^{\mathrm{w}^{\circ}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu} \otimes(\operatorname{det})^{-\mathrm{w}^{\circ}}\right)=H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{0} ; \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right)
$$

The purity weight of $\mu-w^{\circ}$ is 0 , and furthermore $\Pi \otimes\left|\left.\right|^{w^{\circ}}\right.$ is a unitary cuspidal representation. As far as $L$-functions (and their special values) are concerned, we have not lost any information since $L\left(s, \Pi \otimes\| \|^{w^{0}}\right)=L\left(s+\mathbf{w}^{\circ}, \Pi\right)$. We will henceforth assume:

1. $\mu$ is a pure dominant integral weight with purity weight 0 ; so $\mu=$ $\left(\mu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$ with $\mu_{v}=\left(n_{v}, 0,-n_{v}\right)$ for a non-negative integer $n_{v}$.
2. $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$, i.e., $\Pi$ is a unitary cuspidal automorphic representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{3} / F$ that has nontrivial cohomology with respect to $\mathcal{M}_{\mu}$.

The following well-known proposition records some basic information about the relative Lie algebra cohomology groups in this context.

Proposition 3.9 Let $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3}\right)$ be a pure dominant integral weight with purity weight 0 ; we write $\mu=\left(\mu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$ with $\mu_{v}=\left(n_{v}, 0,-n_{v}\right)$ for an integer $n_{v} \geq 0$. Put $\ell_{v}=2 n_{v}+2$. Suppose $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$. Then for every $v \in S_{\infty}$ we have

$$
\Pi_{v}=\operatorname{Ind}_{P_{(2,1)}(\mathbb{R})}^{\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{R})}\left(D_{\ell_{v}} \otimes \varepsilon_{\Pi_{v}}\right),
$$

where, $P_{(2,1)}$ is the standard parabolic subgroup of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{R})$ with Levi quotient $\mathrm{GL}_{2}(\mathbb{R}) \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}(\mathbb{R})$, and $\varepsilon_{\Pi_{v}}$ is a quadratic character of $\mathbb{R}^{\times}$. In terms of the central character, we have $\varepsilon_{\Pi_{v}}(-1)=-\omega_{\Pi_{v}}(-1)$. (We also write $\varepsilon_{\Pi_{v}}=\operatorname{sgn}^{\Pi_{\Pi_{v}}}$ with $e_{\Pi_{v}} \in\{0,1\}$.)
Define $b_{3}^{F}=2 d_{F}=2[F: \mathbb{Q}]$. The smallest degree $\bullet$ for which

$$
H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{0} ; \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right) \neq 0 \text { is } \bullet=b_{3}^{F}=2 d_{F},
$$

and in this degree, the cohomology group is one-dimensional. Further as a $K_{3, \infty} / K_{3, \infty}^{0}$-module we denote the cohomology group by $\epsilon_{\Pi}$, which is a $d_{F}$-tuple of signs: $\left(\operatorname{sgn}^{1+e_{\Pi_{v}}}\right)_{v \in S_{r}}$.

### 3.3.2 Cohomological representations of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{C})$

(See [29] for more details and further references.) Suppose $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$ and $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3}\right)$ is a pure dominant integral weight written as $\mu=\left(\mu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$. We shall drop $v$ from the notations for this section. Then, for each complex place $v, \mu$ is a pair $\left(\mu^{\iota}, \mu^{\bar{L}}\right)$, where $\iota$ is a complex embedding that has been non-canonically chosen and fixed, and $\bar{\iota}$ is the conjugate embedding; and we have 3 -tuples $\mu^{\iota}=\left(\mu_{1}, \mu_{2}, \mu_{3}\right)$ and $\mu^{\bar{\tau}}=\left(\mu_{1}^{*}, \mu_{2}^{*}, \mu_{3}^{*}\right)$ of integers. Let $\mathrm{w}=\mu_{1}^{*}+\mu_{3}=\mu_{2}^{*}+\mu_{2}=\mu_{3}^{*}+\mu_{1}$ be the purity weight of $\mu$. Then

$$
\mu^{\iota}=\left(\mu_{1}, \mu_{2}, \mu_{3}\right), \text { and } \mu^{\bar{\tau}}=\left(\mathbf{w}-\mu_{3}, \mathbf{w}-\mu_{2}, \mathbf{w}-\mu_{1}\right) .
$$

Reduction of $\mu$ : Let $\chi$ be an algebraic Hecke character such that $\chi_{\infty}(z)=$ $z^{m} \bar{z}^{n}$ for some $m, n \in \mathbb{Z}$. Before we proceed, we need to prove the existence of character $\chi$. We have the following lemma:

Lemma 3.10 For a fixed $v \in S_{c}$ and given integers $m$ and $n$. There exist an algebraic Hecke character $\chi$ such that $\chi_{\infty}(z)=z^{m} \bar{z}^{n}$.

Proof. Take $f:=n-m$ and $\sigma:=\frac{m+n}{2}$. From Section 3.2, given $f \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $\sigma \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$, there exists a character of type $\left(\mathrm{A}_{0}\right)$ belonging to $f$ which has following shape:

$$
\chi=\chi^{1}\|\cdot\|^{\sigma},
$$

such that $f \equiv 2 \sigma(\bmod 2)$ and $\chi^{1}: F^{\times} \backslash \mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times} \longrightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$with $\chi_{\infty}^{1}(z)=\left(\frac{z}{|z|}\right)^{-f}$. Then for each $v \in S_{c}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\chi_{v}(z) & =(z /|z|)^{-f}|z|^{2 \sigma} \\
& =z^{-f}|z|^{f+2 \sigma} \\
& =z^{-f} z^{\frac{f+2 \sigma}{2}} \bar{z}^{\frac{f+2 \sigma}{2}} \\
& =z^{-f / 2+\sigma} \bar{z}^{f / 2+\sigma} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Clearly $m=-\frac{f}{2}+\sigma$, and $n=\frac{f}{2}+\sigma$. Then $\chi_{\infty}(z)=z^{m} \bar{z}^{n}$. Hence $\chi$ is the required character.

Now using [29, Proposition 2.14],

$$
\Pi_{\infty}=\operatorname{Ind}_{B(\mathbb{C})}^{\mathrm{GL}(\mathbb{C})}\left(z^{a_{1}} \bar{z}^{b_{1}} \otimes z^{a_{2}} \bar{z}^{b_{2}} \otimes z^{a_{3}} \bar{z}^{b_{3}}\right)
$$

where $\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}\right)=\left(\mu_{1}+1, \mu_{2}, \mu_{3}-1\right)$; and $\left(b_{1}, b_{2}, b_{3}\right)=\left(\mu_{3}^{*}-1, \mu_{2}^{*}, \mu_{1}^{*}+1\right)$.
Then

$$
L_{\infty}\left(s, \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \chi_{\infty}\right) \approx \prod_{i=1}^{3} \Gamma\left(s+\frac{a_{i}+b_{i}+m+n}{2}+\frac{\left|a_{i}-b_{i}+m-n\right|}{2}\right)
$$

If $m=n$,

$$
\begin{align*}
L_{\infty}\left(s, \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \chi_{\infty}\right) & \approx \prod_{i=1}^{3} \Gamma\left(s+\frac{a_{i}+b_{i}+2 m}{2}+\frac{\left|a_{i}-b_{i}\right|}{2}\right) \\
& \approx \prod_{i=1}^{3} \Gamma\left(s+m+\frac{a_{i}+b_{i}}{2}+\frac{\left|a_{i}-b_{i}\right|}{2}\right)  \tag{3.11}\\
& =L_{\infty}\left(s+m, \Pi_{\infty}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Thus for the game to work we need to impose the following hypothesis: Consider $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$ with $\mu$ in $X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3, \infty}\right)$ such that for each $v \in S_{c}$, $\mu_{2}=\mu_{2}^{*}$. It is clear then that the representation $\Pi$ under a Tate twist,

$$
\Pi \otimes\|\cdot\|^{\mu_{2}} \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu-\mu_{2}\right)
$$

because

$$
\begin{aligned}
H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{0} ; V_{\Pi_{\infty}} \otimes\|\cdot\|_{\infty}^{\mu_{2}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right. & \left.\otimes \operatorname{det}^{-\mu_{2}} \otimes \operatorname{det}^{-\mu_{2}}\right) \\
& =H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{0} ; V_{\Pi_{\infty}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The purity weight of $\mu-\mu_{2}$ is 0 , and furthermore $\Pi \otimes\|\cdot\|^{\mu_{2}}$ is a unitary cuspidal representation. As far as $L$-functions (and their special values) are concerned, we have not lost any information since

$$
L\left(s, \Pi \otimes\| \|^{\mu_{2}}\right)=L\left(s+\mu_{2}, \Pi\right)
$$

Twisted Representation. Consider ${ }^{\mathrm{t}} \Pi=\Pi \otimes\| \|^{\mu_{2}}$ be a Tate twist of $\Pi$ along with the condition that for each complex place $v$ assume $\mu_{2}=\mu_{2}^{*}$. Put ${ }^{\mathrm{t}} \mu=\mu-\mu_{2}$. This gives us ${ }^{\mathrm{t}} \Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3},{ }^{\mathrm{t}} \mu\right)$, where ${ }^{\mathrm{t}} \mu_{v}=\left(\mu^{l}, \mu^{\bar{\tau}}\right)$, such that

$$
\mu^{\iota}=\left(\mu_{1}-\mu_{2}, \mu_{2}-\mu_{2}, \mu_{3}-\mu_{2}\right), \text { and } \mu^{\bar{\tau}}=\left(\mu_{1}^{*}-\mu_{2}^{*}, \mu_{2}^{*}-\mu_{2}^{*}, \mu_{3}^{*}-\mu_{2}^{*}\right) .
$$

Then for each $v \in S_{c}$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
{ }^{\mathrm{t}} \mu=\left(n_{1}, 0, n_{2} ;-n_{2}, 0,-n_{1}\right), \tag{3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\mu_{1}-\mu_{2}=n_{1} \in \mathbb{Z}^{+}$and $\mu_{3}-\mu_{2}=n_{2} \in \mathbb{Z}^{-}$, where $\mathbb{Z}^{+}=\{n \in \mathbb{Z}: n \geq 0\}$ and $\mathbb{Z}^{-}=\{n \in \mathbb{Z}: n \leq 0\}$.

Henceforth we will assume:

1. $\mu$ is a pure dominant integral weight with purity weight 0 ; so $\mu=$ $\left(\mu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$ with $\mu_{v}=\left(\mu^{\iota_{v}} ; \mu^{\tau_{v}}\right)=\left(n_{1 v}, 0, n_{2 v} ;-n_{2 v}, 0,-n_{1 v}\right)$ for a nonnegative integer $n_{1 v}$ and a non-positive integer $n_{2 v}$. Furthermore, assume $\mu$ to be a parallel weight; so there exists

$$
\mu_{0}=\left(\mu_{0}^{\iota} ; \mu_{0}^{\bar{\tau}}\right)=\left(n_{1}, 0, n_{2} ;-n_{2}, 0,-n_{1}\right)
$$

such that for each $v \in S_{\infty}, \mu_{v}=\mu_{0}$.
2. $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$, i.e., $\Pi$ is a unitary cuspidal automorphic representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{3} / F$ that has nontrivial cohomology with respect to $\mathcal{M}_{\mu}$,

The following well-known proposition records some basic information about the relative Lie algebra cohomology groups in this context.

Proposition 3.13 Let $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3}\right)$ be a pure dominant integral 'parallel' weight with purity weight 0 ; we write $\mu=\left(\mu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$ with

$$
\mu_{v}=\left(n_{1}, 0, n_{2} ;-n_{2}, 0,-n_{1}\right)
$$

for integers $n_{1} \geq 0 \geq n_{2}$. Define the cuspidal parameters as:

$$
\begin{gathered}
a=\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}\right):=\left(n_{1}+1,0, n_{2}-1\right) \\
b=\left(b_{1}, b_{2}, b_{3}\right):=\left(-n_{1}-1,0,-n_{2}+1\right) .
\end{gathered}
$$

Suppose $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$. Then for every $v \in S_{c}$ and corresponding to parameters $a, b$ we have

$$
\Pi_{v}:=\operatorname{Ind}_{B(\mathbb{C})}^{\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{C})}\left(z^{a_{1}} \bar{z}^{b_{1}} \otimes z^{a_{2}} \bar{z}^{b_{2}} \otimes z^{a_{3}} \bar{z}^{b_{3}}\right)
$$

where for integers $a, b, z^{a} \bar{z}^{b}$ is the character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$which sends $z$ to $z^{a} \bar{z}^{b}$. It is well known that $\Pi_{v}$ is irreducible, essential tempered, and generic.
Define $b_{3}^{F}=3 d_{0}$. The smallest degree $\bullet$ for which

$$
H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{0} ; \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right) \neq 0 \text { is } \bullet=b_{3}^{F}=3 d_{0}
$$

and in this degree, the cohomology group is one-dimensional, and since $K_{3, \infty}=$ $K_{3, \infty}^{0}$ is connected, $\pi_{0}\left(K_{3, \infty}\right)$ is trivial, and hence acts trivially on this cohomology group.

### 3.4 Eisentein Cohomology for $\mathrm{GL}_{2}$

For $i=1,2$, let $\chi_{i}: F^{\times} \backslash \mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times} \longrightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$be algebraic Hecke characters. Then according to Section 3.2, $\chi_{i}$ 's have the following shape:

- If $F$ is a totally real field, then

$$
\chi_{i}=\|.\|^{d_{i}} \chi_{i}^{0}
$$

where $\chi_{1}^{0}$, and $\chi_{2}^{0}$ are of finite order and $d_{1}, d_{2} \in \mathbb{Z}$. Clearly for every archimedean place $v, \chi_{i}^{0}$ is a quadratic character of $\mathbb{R}^{\times}$. Thus we have $\chi_{i v}^{0}=(\operatorname{sgn})^{e_{i v}}$, for $e_{i v} \in\{0,1\}$.

- If $F$ is a CM field, then

$$
\chi_{i}=\|\cdot\|^{\sigma_{i}} \chi_{i}^{1},
$$

for some $\sigma_{i} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ and $\chi_{i}^{1}$ are the characters of parallel weight such that at each infinite place $v \in S_{c}$,

$$
\chi_{i, v}^{1}(z)=(z /|z|)^{-f_{i}},
$$

with $f_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $f_{i} \equiv 2 \sigma_{i}(\bmod 2)$.

Define the globally induced representation

$$
\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right):=\operatorname{Ind}_{B_{2}(\mathbb{A})}^{G_{2}\left(\mathbb{A}^{2}\right)}\left(\chi_{1}\| \|^{1 / 2}, \chi_{2}\| \|^{-1 / 2}\right),
$$

which decomposes into a restricted tensor product $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)=\otimes_{v}^{\prime} \Sigma\left(\chi_{1, v}, \chi_{2, v}\right)$, where $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1, v}, \chi_{2, v}\right)$ denotes the normalized parabolically induced representation $\operatorname{Ind}_{B_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)}^{\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)}\left(\chi_{1, v}| |_{v}^{1 / 2}, \chi_{2, v}| |_{v}^{-1 / 2}\right)$ of $\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)$. Let

$$
\Sigma_{f}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right):=\otimes_{v \nmid \infty} \Sigma\left(\chi_{1, v}, \chi_{2, v}\right)
$$

and

$$
\Sigma_{\infty}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right):=\otimes_{v \mid \infty} \Sigma\left(\chi_{1, v}, \chi_{2, v}\right)
$$

denote the finite and infinite part of $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$, respectively. For simplicity of notations take $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1, v}, \chi_{2, v}\right)=: V_{\chi_{v}}$.

### 3.4.1 Choice of $\lambda$ for non-zero cohomology

Let $\mathcal{M}_{\lambda}$ be a finite dimensional representation of $G_{2, \infty}$, with highest integral dominant weight $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}} \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{2}\right)$ which decomposes as $\mathcal{M}_{\lambda}=$ $\otimes_{v \mid \infty} \mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}$ where $\mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}$ is the finite-dimensional irreducible representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)$ with highest weight $\lambda_{v}$. In this subsection for each fix $v \in S_{\infty}$, we want to find $\lambda_{v}$ in terms of parameters appear in the characters $\chi_{1}$ and $\chi_{2}$ such that

$$
H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, v}, K_{2, v}^{0} ; V_{\chi_{v}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}\right) \neq 0
$$

for some $\bullet \in \mathbb{Z}$. We handle real and complex case separately:
Case 1. If $v$ is a real place (The basic reference here is Harder [16]): If we write $\lambda_{v}=\left(\lambda_{v, 1}, \lambda_{v, 2}\right)$, with integers $\lambda_{v, j}$ and $\lambda_{v, 1} \geq \lambda_{v, 2}$, then $\mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}=\operatorname{Sym}^{\lambda_{v, 1}-\lambda_{v, 2}}\left(\mathbb{C}^{2}\right) \otimes \operatorname{det}^{\lambda_{v, 2}}$. Hence, the dimension of $\mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}$ is $\lambda_{v, 1}-\lambda_{v, 2}+1$, and its central character is $t \mapsto t^{\lambda_{v, 1}+\lambda_{v, 2}}$. We want to find ( $\lambda_{v, 1}, \lambda_{v, 2}$ ) in terms of $d_{1}, d_{2}, \epsilon_{1 v}, \epsilon_{2 v}$ such that

$$
H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, v}, K_{2, v}^{0} ; V_{\chi_{v}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}\right) \neq 0
$$

This is well-known, and we follow [16], however we need to transcribe his notation in terms of our notation. Take $d \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\nu \in \mathbb{Z}$, and define the finite-dimensional representation $M(d, \nu)$ acting on the space of homogeneous polynomials of degree $d$ in two variables $X, Y$ given by:

$$
\left(\left(\begin{array}{ll}
a & b \\
c & d
\end{array}\right) P\right)(X, Y)=P(a X+c Y, b X+d Y)(a d-b c)^{\nu} .
$$

The dimension of $M(d, \nu)$ is $d+1$, and it's central character is $t \mapsto t^{d+2 \nu}$. For $m \in \mathbb{Z}$, let $\xi_{m}$ denote the character of $\mathbb{R}^{\times}$that sends $t$ to $t^{m}$. Furthermore, for a pair of characters $\chi_{i}(\mathrm{i}=1,2)$ of $\mathbb{R}^{\times}$, let

$$
{ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B}^{G}\left(\chi_{1} \otimes \chi_{2}\right)
$$

denote the algebraic (un-normalized) parabolic induction of the character $\chi_{1} \otimes \chi_{2}$ of the Borel subgroup to $\mathrm{GL}_{2}(\mathbb{R})$. Then we have (see [16,
page 69])
$H^{q}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}(\mathbb{R}), \mathrm{SO}(2) ;{ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B}^{G}\left(\xi_{-\nu-d} \otimes \xi_{-\nu}\right) \otimes M(d, \nu)\right)= \begin{cases}\mathbb{C} & \text { if } q=\{0,1\} \\ 0 & \text { otherwise. }\end{cases}$
and similarly we have
$H^{q}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}(\mathbb{R}), \mathrm{SO}(2) ;{ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B}^{G}\left(\xi_{1-\nu} \otimes \xi_{-d-\nu-1}\right) \otimes M(d, \nu)\right)$

$$
= \begin{cases}\mathbb{C} & \text { if } q=\{1,2\} \\ 0 & \text { otherwise. }\end{cases}
$$

Since the central characters of ${ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B}^{G}\left(\xi_{-\nu-d} \otimes \xi_{-\nu}\right) \otimes M(d, \nu)$ and ${ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B}^{G}\left(\xi_{1-\nu} \otimes \xi_{-d-\nu-1}\right) \otimes M(d, \nu)$ are trivial (a necessary condition for non-vanishing of cohomology dictated by Wigner's Lemma), we also have $H^{q}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}(\mathbb{R}), \mathrm{SO}(2) ;-\right)=H^{q}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}(\mathbb{R}), \mathrm{SO}(2) \mathbb{R}^{\times} ;-\right)$for the modules above. Comparing $M(d, \nu)$ with $\mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}$ we get:

$$
d=\lambda_{v, 1}-\lambda_{v, 2}, \nu=\lambda_{v, 2} .
$$

Keeping later application in mind, we would like to arrange for $V_{\chi_{v}}$ to be ${ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B}^{G}\left(\xi_{1-\nu} \otimes \xi_{-d-\nu-1}\right)={ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B}^{G}\left(\xi_{1-\lambda_{v, 2}} \otimes \xi_{-1-\lambda_{v, 1}}\right)$ to get nontrivial cohomology for $q=1,2$. Using definitions, we get

$$
V_{\chi_{v}}:=\operatorname{Ind}_{B_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)}^{\mathrm{GLL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)}\left(\chi_{1, v}| |_{v}^{1 / 2}, \chi_{2, v}| |_{v}^{-1 / 2}\right)={ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B}^{G}\left(\chi_{1, v}| |_{v}, \chi_{2, v}| |_{v}^{-1}\right) .
$$

Therefore, we would like to have:

$$
\left|t_{1}\right|^{d_{1}+1}\left|t_{2}\right|^{d_{2}-1}\left(\operatorname{sgn}\left(t_{1}\right)\right)^{\epsilon_{1 v}}\left(\operatorname{sgn}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)^{\epsilon_{2 v}}=t_{1}^{1-\lambda_{v, 2}} t_{2}^{-1-\lambda_{v, 1}}
$$

which may be written as

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\left|t_{1}\right|^{d_{1}+1}\left|t_{2}\right|^{d_{2}-1}\left(\operatorname{sgn}\left(t_{1}\right)\right)^{\epsilon_{1}}\left(\operatorname{sgn}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)^{\epsilon_{2 v}} \\
&=\left|t_{1}\right|^{1-\lambda_{v, 2}}\left(\operatorname{sgn}\left(t_{1}\right)\right)^{1-\lambda_{v, 2}}\left|t_{2}\right|^{-1-\lambda_{v, 1}}\left(\operatorname{sgn}\left(t_{2}\right)\right)^{-1-\lambda_{v, 1}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

On comparing both sides we get:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \lambda_{v, 1}=-d_{2}, \quad \lambda_{v, 1} \equiv \epsilon_{2 v}+1(\bmod 2) \\
& \lambda_{v, 2}=-d_{1}, \quad \lambda_{v, 2} \equiv \epsilon_{1 v}+1(\bmod 2) . \tag{3.14}
\end{align*}
$$

Case 2. If $v$ is a complex place (See Harder [16] for reference):
If we write $\lambda_{v}=\left(\lambda_{v}^{\iota}, \lambda_{v}^{\bar{\nu}}\right)$ with $\lambda_{v}^{\iota}=\left(\lambda_{v, 1}, \lambda_{v, 2}\right)$, and $\lambda_{v}^{\bar{\tau}}=\left(\lambda_{v, 1}^{*}, \lambda_{v, 2}^{*}\right)$ where $\lambda_{v, j}$, and $\lambda_{v, j}^{*}$ are integers such that $\lambda_{v, 1} \geq \lambda_{v, 2}$ and $\lambda_{v, 1}^{*} \geq \lambda_{v, 2}^{*}$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}} & =\mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}^{\iota} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}^{\tau} \\
& =\operatorname{Sym}^{\lambda_{v, 1}-\lambda_{v, 2}}\left(\mathbb{C}^{2}\right) \otimes \operatorname{det}^{\lambda_{v, 2}} \otimes \operatorname{Sym}^{-}{ }^{\lambda_{v, 1}^{*}-\lambda_{v, 2}^{*}}\left(\mathbb{C}^{2}\right) \otimes \overline{\operatorname{det}}^{\lambda_{v, 2}^{*}}
\end{aligned}
$$

We want to find $\left(\lambda_{v, 1}, \lambda_{v, 2}\right)$ and $\left(\lambda_{v, 1}^{*}, \lambda_{v, 2}^{*}\right)$ in terms of $f_{1}, f_{2}, \sigma_{1}, \sigma_{2}$ such that

$$
H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, v}, K_{2, v}^{0} ; V_{\chi_{v}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}\right) \neq 0
$$

Again we need to transcribe the notation of [16] in terms of our notation. Take $d \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\nu \in \mathbb{Z}$, and define the finite-dimensional representation $M(d, \nu)=M\left(d_{1}, \nu_{1}\right) \otimes M\left(d_{2}, \nu_{2}\right)$ where each $M\left(d_{i}, \nu_{i}\right)$ is the finite dimensional representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{2}(\mathbb{R})$ acting on the space of homogeneous polynomials of degree $d_{i}$ in two variables $X, Y$ given by:

$$
\left(\left(\begin{array}{ll}
a & b \\
c & d
\end{array}\right) P\right)(X, Y)=P(a X+c Y, b X+d Y)(a d-b c)^{\nu_{i}}
$$

The dimension of $M\left(d_{i}, \nu_{i}\right)$ is $d_{i}+1$, and its central character is $t \mapsto$ $t^{d_{i}+2 \nu_{i}}$. For $m, n \in \mathbb{Z}$, let $\xi_{(m, n)}$ denote the character of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$that sends $z$ to $z^{m} \bar{z}^{n}$. Furthermore, for a pair of characters $\chi_{i}(\mathrm{i}=1,2)$ of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$, let ${ }^{a} \operatorname{Ind}_{B}^{G}\left(\chi_{1} \otimes \chi_{2}\right)$ denote the algebraic (un-normalized) parabolic induction of the character $\chi_{1} \otimes \chi_{2}$ of the Borel subgroup $B(\mathbb{C})$ to $\mathrm{GL}_{2}(\mathbb{C})$. Then we have (see [16, page 74])

$$
\begin{aligned}
& H^{q}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}(\mathbb{C}), \mathrm{U}(2) \mathbb{C}^{\times} ;{ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B}^{G}\left(\xi_{\left(1-\nu_{1},-d_{2}-\nu_{2}\right)} \otimes \xi_{\left(-d_{1}-1-\nu_{1},-\nu_{2}\right)}\right) \otimes M(d, \nu)\right) \\
&= \begin{cases}\mathbb{C} & \text { if } q \in\{0,1\}, \\
0 & \text { otherwise },\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

if $d_{1}=d_{2}$. (The cases that will be relevant to us later on, based on the choices in Proposition 4.20, indeed satisfy the condition $d_{1}=d_{2}$.) Comparing $M(d, \nu)$ with $\mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}$ we get:

$$
d_{1}=\lambda_{v, 1}-\lambda_{v, 2}, \quad \nu_{1}=\lambda_{v, 2},
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
d_{2}=\lambda_{v, 1}^{*}-\lambda_{v, 2}^{*}, \quad \nu_{2}=\lambda_{v, 2}^{*} . \tag{3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Keeping this in mind, we would like to arrange for $V_{\chi_{v}}$ to be ${ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B}^{G}\left(\xi_{\left(1-\nu_{1},-d_{2}-\nu_{2}\right)} \otimes \xi_{\left(-d_{1}-1-\nu_{1},-v_{2}\right)}\right)$

$$
={ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B}^{G}\left(\xi_{\left(1-\lambda_{v, 2},-\lambda_{v, 1}^{*}\right)} \otimes \xi_{\left(-\lambda_{v, 1}-1,-\lambda_{v, 2}^{*}\right)}\right)
$$

to get nontrivial cohomology for $q=1,2$. Using definitions, we get

$$
V_{\chi_{v}}:=\operatorname{Ind}_{B_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)}^{\mathrm{GL}\left(F_{v}\right)}\left(\left.\chi_{1, v}\right|_{v, \mathbb{C}} ^{1 / 2}, \chi_{2, v}| |_{v, \mathbb{C}}^{-1 / 2}\right)={ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B\left(F_{v}\right)}^{\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)}\left(\chi_{1, v}| |_{v, \mathbb{C}},\left.\chi_{2, v}\right|_{v, \mathbb{C}} ^{-1}\right) .
$$

Therefore, we would like to have:

$$
\left(\frac{t_{1}}{\left|t_{1}\right|}\right)^{-f_{1}}\left|t_{1}\right|^{\sigma_{1}+2}\left(\frac{t_{2}}{\left|t_{2}\right|}\right)^{-f_{2}}\left|t_{2}\right|^{\sigma_{2}-2}=t_{1}^{1-\lambda_{v, 2}} \bar{t}_{1}^{-\lambda_{v, 1}^{*}} t_{2}^{-\lambda_{v, 1}-1} \bar{t}_{2}^{-\lambda_{v, 2}^{*}}
$$

which may be written as

$$
t_{1}^{\frac{-f_{1}+2 \sigma_{1}}{2}+1} \bar{t}_{1} \frac{f_{1}+2 \sigma_{1}}{2}+1 t_{2}^{\frac{-f_{2}+2 \sigma_{2}}{2}-1} \bar{t}_{2} \frac{f_{2}+2 \sigma_{2}}{2}-1=t_{1}^{1-\lambda_{v, 2}} \bar{t}_{1}^{-\lambda_{v, 1}^{*}} t_{2}^{-\lambda_{v, 1}-1} \bar{t}_{2}^{-\lambda_{v, 2}^{*}} .
$$

On comparing both sides we get:

$$
\lambda_{v, 1}=\left(\frac{f_{2}}{2}-\sigma_{2}\right), \lambda_{v, 2}=\left(\frac{f_{1}}{2}-\sigma_{1}\right) ;
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{v, 1}^{*}=-\left(\frac{f_{1}}{2}+\sigma_{1}+1\right), \lambda_{v, 2}^{*}=\left(1-\frac{f_{2}}{2}-\sigma_{2}\right) . \tag{3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Summarizing both cases, we have the following lemma:

Lemma 3.17 For $i=1,2$, let $\chi_{i}$ be algebraic Hecke characters of $F$. Let $\lambda \in X^{+}\left(T_{2, \infty}\right)$ be a dominant integral parallel weight written as $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$. Suppose that $\lambda$ satisfies Equation (3.14) if $F$ is totally real, and satisfies Equation (3.16) if $F$ is $C M$ field. Then

$$
H^{q}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, \infty}, K_{2, \infty}^{0} ; \Sigma_{\infty}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda}\right) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow q=1 \text { or } 2 .
$$

This lemma leads to the following proposition:
Proposition 3.18 Assume the following hypothesis:

- For totally real field: Let $\chi_{i}=\|.\|^{d_{i}} \chi_{i}^{\circ}$ be algebraic Hecke characters of $F$ with $d_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $\chi_{i}^{\circ}$ finite-order character. Suppose that $d_{1} \geq d_{2}$, and for $v \in S_{\infty}$ suppose also that $\chi_{i v}^{\circ}=(\operatorname{sgn})^{e_{i v}}$ for $e_{i v} \in\{0,1\}$ such that $e_{i v} \not \equiv d_{i}(\bmod 2)$. Let $\lambda \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{2}\right)$ be the dominant integral 'parallel' weight determined by $d_{1}, d_{2}$ as: $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$, where each $\lambda_{v}=\left(-d_{2},-d_{1}\right)$. Define $b_{2}^{F}=d_{F}$.
- For CM field: Let $\chi_{i}=\|.\|^{\sigma_{i}} \chi_{i}^{1}$ be algebraic Hecke characters of $F$ with $\sigma_{i} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ and $\chi_{i}^{1}$ are the characters such that $\chi_{i \infty}^{1}\left(z_{\infty}\right)=\left(z_{\infty} /\left|z_{\infty}\right|\right)^{-f_{i}}$ for some $f_{i} \in \mathbb{Z}$ with the property $f_{i} \equiv 2 \sigma_{i}(\bmod 2)$. Further let $\lambda \in X^{+}\left(T_{2}\right)$ be the dominant integral 'parallel' weight determined by $f_{1}, f_{2}, \sigma_{1}, \sigma_{2}$ as: $\lambda=$ $\left(\lambda_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$, where each $\lambda_{v}=\left(\lambda_{v}^{\iota}, \lambda_{v}^{\bar{u}}\right)$; with

$$
\lambda_{v}^{\iota}=\left(\frac{f_{2}}{2}-\sigma_{2}, \frac{f_{1}}{2}-\sigma_{1}\right) \text { and } \lambda_{v}^{\bar{\imath}}=\left(-\left(\frac{f_{1}}{2}+\sigma_{1}+1\right), 1-\frac{f_{2}}{2}-\sigma_{2}\right) .
$$

Define $b_{2}^{F}=d_{0}$.
Then

$$
H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, \infty}, K_{2, \infty}^{0} ; \Sigma_{\infty}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda}\right) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow b_{2}^{F} \leq \bullet \leq 2 b_{2}^{F} .
$$

Furthermore, in the extremal degrees of $b_{2}^{F}$ and $2 b_{2}^{F}$, the cohomology group is one-dimensional.

Proof. The proof follows from Künneth formula for relative Lie algebra
cohomology (and the details recalled above)

$$
\begin{aligned}
& H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, \infty}, K_{2, \infty}^{0} ; \Sigma_{\infty}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda}\right)\left(\epsilon_{\Pi}\right) \\
&=\bigoplus_{\Sigma a_{v}=\bullet}\left(\bigotimes_{v \in S_{r}} H^{a_{v}}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, v}, K_{2, v}^{0} ; \Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}\right)\left(\epsilon_{v}\right)\right. \\
&\left.\bigotimes_{v \in S_{c}} H^{a_{v}}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, v}, K_{2, v}^{0} ; \Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}\right)(\mathbb{1})\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

### 3.4.2 Action of $K_{2, \infty} / K_{2, \infty}^{0}$ on group cohomology

We need to determine the action of $\pi_{0}\left(K_{2, \infty}\right)$ on Lie algebra cohomology groups $H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, \infty}, K_{2, \infty}^{0} ; \Sigma_{\infty}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda}\right)$.

Case 1. F is totally real field. Let's recall some standard convention: For a representation $\Pi$ of $\mathrm{GL}_{n}$ (in any suitable local or global context) and for a real number $t$, we denote $\Pi \otimes|.|^{t}$ by $\Pi(t)$. Also, we will abbreviate the normalized parabolically induced representation $\operatorname{Ind}_{B_{2}(\mathbb{R})}^{\mathrm{GL}(\mathbb{R})}\left(\xi_{m_{1}} \otimes \xi_{m_{2}}\right)$ simply as $\xi_{m_{1}} \times \xi_{m_{2}}$. Observe that, for $v \in S_{\infty}$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Sigma_{v}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right) & =\chi_{1 v}(1 / 2) \times \chi_{2 v}(-1 / 2) \\
& =|\cdot|^{d_{1}} \operatorname{sgn}^{e_{1 v}}(1 / 2) \times|\cdot|^{d_{2}} \operatorname{sgn}^{e_{2 v}}(-1 / 2) \\
& =\xi_{d_{1}}(\operatorname{sgn})(1 / 2) \times \xi_{d_{2}}(\operatorname{sgn})(-1 / 2) \\
& =\xi_{-\lambda_{v, 2}}(\operatorname{sgn})(1 / 2) \times \xi_{-\lambda_{v, 1}}(\operatorname{sgn})(-1 / 2) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, we need to determine the action of $\pi_{0}\left(K_{2, \infty}\right)$ on the cohomology group $H^{1}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, \infty}, K_{2, \infty}^{0} ; \Sigma_{\infty}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda}\right)$. To this end, take two integers $a$ and $b$ with $a \geq b$. Consider the following exact sequence of $\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}(\mathbb{R}), \mathrm{O}(2) \mathbb{R}_{+}^{\times}\right)$-modules:

$$
0 \longrightarrow D_{a-b+1}\left(\frac{a+b}{2}\right) \longrightarrow \xi_{a}(1 / 2) \times \xi_{b}(-1 / 2) \longrightarrow \mathcal{M}_{a, b} \longrightarrow 0
$$

Twisting by the sgn character, while noting that twisting commutes with induction, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 \longrightarrow D_{a-b+1}\left(\frac{a+b}{2}\right) \longrightarrow \xi_{a}(\operatorname{sgn})(1 / 2) \times & \xi_{b}(\operatorname{sgn})(-1 / 2) \\
& \longrightarrow \mathcal{M}_{a, b} \otimes \operatorname{sgn} \longrightarrow 0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that the discrete series representation $D_{l}$ is invariant under twisting by sgn character. For brevity, let $\nu:=(a, b) ; \nu^{\vee}=(-b,-a)$;

$$
\begin{gathered}
V_{\nu}:=\xi_{a}(\operatorname{sgn})(1 / 2) \times \xi_{b}(\operatorname{sgn})(-1 / 2), \\
D_{\nu^{\vee}}=D_{a-b+1}\left(\frac{a+b}{2}\right),
\end{gathered}
$$

and

$$
\mathcal{M}_{\nu}^{-}:=\mathcal{M}_{\nu} \otimes \operatorname{sgn} .
$$

The above exact sequence may then be written as

$$
0 \longrightarrow D_{\nu^{\vee}} \xrightarrow{i} V_{\nu} \longrightarrow \mathcal{M}_{\nu}^{-} \longrightarrow 0 .
$$

Tensor this sequence by $\mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}=\mathcal{M}_{\nu}^{\vee}$, and apply $H^{\bullet}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}, \mathrm{SO}(2) \mathbb{R}_{+}^{\times} ;-\right)$ to get the following long exact sequence:

$$
\begin{gathered}
0 \rightarrow H^{0}\left(D_{\nu^{\vee}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \rightarrow H^{0}\left(V_{\nu} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \rightarrow H^{0}\left(\mathcal{M}_{\nu}^{-} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \rightarrow \\
\rightarrow H^{1}\left(D_{\nu^{\vee}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \rightarrow H^{1}\left(V_{\nu} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \rightarrow H^{1}\left(\mathcal{M}_{\nu}^{-} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \rightarrow \\
\rightarrow H^{2}\left(D_{\nu^{\vee}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \rightarrow H^{2}\left(V_{\nu} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \rightarrow H^{2}\left(\mathcal{M}_{\nu}^{-} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \rightarrow \\
H^{3}\left(D_{\nu^{\vee}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu \vee}\right) \rightarrow \cdots
\end{gathered}
$$

Now, we make precise all the above cohomology groups as $\mathrm{O}(2) / \mathrm{SO}(2)-$ modules. Recall $\mathbb{1}$ stand for the trivial character, and let sgn the signcharacter of $\mathrm{O}(2) / \mathrm{SO}(2)$. For the finite-dimensional modules $\mathcal{M}_{\nu}^{-} \otimes$ $\mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}$, first of all, since $H^{0}=$ Hom, we easily see that

$$
H^{0}\left(\mathcal{M}_{\nu}^{-} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu} \vee\right)=\operatorname{sgn}
$$

Next, it follows from [42, Propsition I.4], that

$$
H^{2}\left(\mathcal{M}_{\nu}^{-} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu}\right)=\mathbb{1}
$$

and furthermore, one may see that $H^{q}\left(\mathcal{M}_{\nu}^{-} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu} \vee\right)=0$ for $q \notin\{0,2\}$. For the discrete series representation, it is well-known that $H^{1}\left(D_{\nu^{\vee}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right)=\mathbb{1} \oplus \operatorname{sgn}$, and $H^{q}\left(D_{\nu^{\vee}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right)=0$, if $q \neq 1$. Also, since $V_{\nu}$ doesn't contain a finite-dimensional sub-representation we deduce $H^{0}\left(V_{\nu} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu} \vee\right)=0$, whence, $H^{1}\left(V_{\nu} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu}\right)$ sits in the short exact sequence:

$$
0 \rightarrow H^{0}\left(\mathcal{M}_{\nu}^{-} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \rightarrow H^{1}\left(D_{\nu^{\vee}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \rightarrow H^{1}\left(V_{\nu} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \rightarrow 0
$$

Hence, as an $\mathrm{O}(2) / \mathrm{SO}(2)$-module we get

$$
H^{1}\left(V_{\nu} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right)=\mathbb{1}
$$

Furthermore, if $\left[D_{\nu^{\vee}}\right]^{+}$denotes an eigenvector in $H^{1}\left(D_{\nu^{\vee}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right)$ for the trivial action of $\mathrm{O}(2)$, then we may take it's image under $i^{\bullet}$ (the map induced by the inclusion $i$ in cohomology) as a generator $\left[V_{\nu}\right]$ for $H^{1}\left(V_{\nu} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu}\right)$, i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
i^{\bullet}\left[D_{\nu^{\vee}}\right]^{+}=\left[V_{\nu}\right] . \tag{3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

To complete the picture, since the dimension of the symmetric space is 2, we have $H^{q}=0$ for all $q \geq 3$, and that

$$
H^{2}\left(V_{\nu} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right) \cong H^{2}\left(\mathcal{M}_{\nu}^{-} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu^{\vee}}\right)=\mathbb{1}
$$

What we especially will want later is summarized in the following lemma:

Lemma 3.20 For integers $a \geq b$, we have as an $\mathrm{O}(2) / \mathrm{SO}(2)$-module:
$H^{1}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}(\mathbb{R}), \mathrm{SO}(2) \mathbb{R}_{+}^{\times} ;\left(\xi_{-b}(\operatorname{sgn})(1 / 2) \times \xi_{-a}(\operatorname{sgn})(-1 / 2)\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{(a, b)}\right)=\mathbb{C} \mathbb{1}$.

Case 2. $F$ is a $C M$ field. Since $K_{3, v}=\mathrm{U}(2) \mathbb{C}^{\times}$, it is connected. The group $\pi_{0}\left(K_{2, v}\right)$ is trivial and hence it vacuously acts trivially on the cohomology group $H^{1}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}(\mathbb{C}), \mathrm{U}(2) \mathbb{C}^{\times} ; \Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}\right)$.

On combining both the cases we return to the global situation and use the above local details to get the following:

Proposition 3.21 Under the hypothesis of Proposition 3.18 we have: The group $\pi_{0}\left(K_{2, \infty}\right)$ acts trivially on $H^{b_{2}^{F}}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, \infty}, K_{2, \infty}^{0} ; \Sigma_{\infty}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda}\right)$.

Proof. Similar to Proposition 3.18, the proof follows from Künneth formula for relative Lie algebra cohomology and Lemma 3.20.

### 3.4.3 Eisenstein cohomology classes corresponding to $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$

This works exactly as in Mahnkopf [26, Section 1.1] with the additional book-keeping of having to work over a totally real field or a CM field and a general coefficient system offering no additional complications; so, we merely record the details for later use. To begin, fix a generator $\left[\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{\infty}\right]=\left[\Sigma_{\infty}\right]$ of the one-dimensional

$$
H^{b_{2}^{F}}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, \infty}, K_{2, \infty}^{0} ; \Sigma_{\infty}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda}\right)=\mathbb{C}\left[\Sigma_{\infty}\right]
$$

Tensoring by $\left[\Sigma_{\infty}\right]$ and following it up by Eisenstein summation gives us a map:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{F}_{\Sigma}: \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{f}^{R_{f}} \longrightarrow H^{b_{2}^{F}}\left(S_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \mathcal{M}_{\lambda}\right) \tag{3.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $R_{f}$ is any open-compact subgroup for which the $R_{f}$-invariants in $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{f}$, denoted as $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{f}^{R_{f}}$, is nonzero. (This is the map denoted as 'Eis' on [26, page 96].) Furthermore, the map $\mathcal{F}_{\Sigma}$ is $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$-equivariant.

## Chapter 4

## Analytic Theory of L-functions

### 4.1 Rankin-Selberg L-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{2}$ <br> 4.1.1 Definition of Whittaker Model

Let $\left(\Pi, V_{\Pi}\right)$ be a smooth cuspidal representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)$. Let $\phi \in V_{\Pi}$ be a smooth cusp form. For each continuous additive character $\psi$, we define a $\psi$-Fourier coefficient, or $\psi$-Whittaker function of $\phi$ by

$$
w_{\phi}(g) \equiv w_{\phi, \psi}(g):=\int_{N_{3}(F) \backslash N_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)} \phi(n g) \psi^{-1}(n) d n,
$$

which satisfies $w_{\phi}(n g)=\psi(n) w_{\phi}(g)$, for all $n \in N_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)$.
Define $\mathcal{W}(\Pi, \psi)=\left\{w_{\phi} \mid \phi \in V_{\Pi}\right\}$. The group $G_{3}(\mathbb{A})$ acts on this space by right translation and the map $\phi \longmapsto w_{\phi}$ intertwines the $G_{3}(\mathbb{A})$-action. The space $\mathcal{W}(\Pi, \psi)$ is called the Whittaker model of $\Pi$. We will be working with Whittaker models and without any ado we will freely use standard results. (See, for example, Bump [6, Chapters 3, 4] for reference.)

Theorem 4.1 (Global Whittaker Models). If $\Pi=\otimes^{\prime} \Pi_{v}$ is a cuspidal automorphic representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)$. Then
(1) there exists a unique Whittaker model $\mathcal{W}(\Pi, \psi)$ for $\Pi$ with respect to a non-trivial additive character $\psi$.
(2) (Local Whittaker Models.) For any place $v$ of F, representation $\Pi_{v}$ of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(F_{v}\right)$ has a unique space $\mathcal{W}\left(\Pi_{v}, \psi_{v}\right)$ of smooth functions such that for all $w \in \mathcal{W}\left(\Pi_{v}, \psi_{v}\right)$,

1. $w(n g)=\psi_{v}(n) w(g), \quad \forall n \in N_{3}\left(F_{v}\right), g \in \mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(F_{v}\right)$,
2. $w\left(g k^{\prime}\right)=w(g)$ for all $k^{\prime} \in K^{\prime}$ for some $K^{\prime} \subset \mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(\mathcal{O}_{v}\right)$.
(3) the global space decomposes as a restricted tensor product of local Whittaker models. That is, if $\phi=\otimes_{v} \phi_{v}$, where $\phi_{v}$ is a spherical vector for almost all $v$, then $w_{\phi}=\prod w_{\phi_{v}}$ with $w_{\phi_{v}}\left(k_{v}\right)=1$ for almost all $v$, where $k_{v}=\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(\mathcal{O}_{v}\right)$.

### 4.1.2 The global integral

We will apply the Rankin-Selberg theory of $L$-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{2}$ to the pair $(\Pi, \Sigma)$, where $\Pi$ is a cuspidal automorphic representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)$ and $\Sigma=\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$ the induced representation defined above. (See, for example, [10, Lecture 5].) Take a cusp form $\phi_{\Pi} \in V_{\Pi}$, and recall that a cusp form is a rapidly decreasing function. Let $\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}} \in \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$, and note that $\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}$ is a function on $B_{2}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_{2}(\mathbb{A})$. To ensure $G_{2}(\mathbb{Q})$-invariance we do an Eisenstein summation:

$$
E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}, g, s\right):=\sum_{\gamma \in B_{2}(F) \backslash \mathrm{GL}_{2}(F)}|\alpha|^{s} \varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}(\gamma g) .
$$

It's well known ([16, page 80$])$ that $E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}, g, s\right)$ converges for $\Re(s) \gg 0$, and has an analytic continuation to an entire function of $s$ if $\chi_{1} \neq \chi_{2}$. (In all the cases that will be relevant to us later on, based on the choices in Propositions 4.19 and 4.20 , we will indeed have $\chi_{1} \neq \chi_{2}$.) Put

$$
E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}\right)(g):=E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}, g, 0\right) .
$$

Consider the global period integral:

$$
\begin{equation*}
I\left(s, \phi_{\Pi}, E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}\right)\right):=\int_{G_{2}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_{2}(\mathbb{A})} \phi_{\Pi}(\iota(g)) E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}\right)(g)|\operatorname{det} g|^{s-1 / 2} d g . \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

This integral converges for all $s \in \mathbb{C}$ since a cusp form has rapid decay whereas an Eisenstein series slowly increases.

To see the Eulerian nature of the above period integral, we pass to the Whitakker models of the representations. Fix a nontrivial additive character $\psi: \mathbb{A}_{F} / F \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^{\times}$, and suppose that

$$
w_{\Pi} \in \mathcal{W}(\Pi, \psi), \text { and } w_{E} \in \mathcal{W}\left(\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right), \bar{\psi}\right)
$$

are global Whittaker vectors corresponding to $\phi_{\Pi}$ and $E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}\right)$, respectively. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& I\left(s, \phi_{\Pi}, E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}\right)\right) \stackrel{(\forall s \in \mathbb{C})}{=} \int_{G_{2}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash G_{2}(\mathbb{A})} \phi_{\Pi}(\iota(g)) E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}\right)(g)|\operatorname{det} g|^{s-\frac{1}{2}} d g, \\
& \stackrel{(\Re(s) \gg 0)}{=} \int_{N_{2}(\mathbb{A}) \backslash G_{2}(\mathbb{A})} w_{\Pi}(\iota(g)) . \\
&\left(\int_{N_{2}(F) \backslash N_{2}(\mathbb{A})} E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}\right)(n g) \psi(n) d n\right)|\operatorname{det} g|^{s-\frac{1}{2}} d g, \\
& \stackrel{(\Re(s) \gg 0)}{=} \int_{N_{2}(\mathbb{A}) \backslash G_{2}(\mathbb{A})} w_{\Pi}(\iota(g)) w_{E}(g)|\operatorname{det} g|^{s-\frac{1}{2}} d g .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now suppose $\phi_{\Pi}$ and $\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}$ are chosen so that $w_{\Pi}$ and $w_{E}$ are pure tensors, written as restricted tensors $w_{\Pi}=\otimes^{\prime} w_{\Pi_{v}}$ and $w_{E}=\otimes^{\prime} w_{E_{v}}$, then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{N_{2}(\mathbb{A}) \backslash G_{2}(\mathbb{A})} w_{\Pi}(\iota(g)) & w_{E}(g)|\operatorname{det} g|^{s-\frac{1}{2}} d g \\
& =\prod_{v} \int_{N_{2}\left(F_{v}\right) \backslash \operatorname{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)} w_{\Pi_{v}}\left(\iota\left(g_{v}\right)\right) w_{E_{v}}\left(g_{v}\right)\left|\operatorname{det} g_{v}\right|_{v}^{s-\frac{1}{2}} d g_{v} \\
= & \prod_{v} \Psi\left(s, w_{\Pi_{v}}, w_{E_{v}}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

We need to compute the local integrals $\Psi\left(s, w_{\Pi_{v}}, w_{E_{v}}\right)$, especially at ramified places.

### 4.1.3 Choice of local Whittaker vectors for induced representations of $\mathrm{GL}_{2}$

For $i=1,2$, let $\chi_{i}$ be algebraic Hecke characters of $F^{\times} \backslash \mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times}$as defined in Section 3.2. Fix a place $v$ of $F$. Let $F_{v}$ be the completion of $F$ at $v$, with
the ring of integers $\mathcal{O}_{v}$ and $\mathfrak{p}_{v}$ is its maximal ideal. Let $q_{v}=\# \mathcal{O}_{v} / \mathfrak{p}_{v}$ be the cardinality of the residue field, and $\varpi_{v}$ denote a fixed generator of $\mathfrak{p}_{v}$. The normalized valuation val on $F_{v}$ has the property that $\operatorname{val}\left(\varpi_{v}\right)=1$. For the normalized absolute value we have $\left|\varpi_{v}\right|=q_{v}^{-1}$. Recall $\Sigma_{v}:=\Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right):=$ $\operatorname{Ind}_{B\left(F_{v}\right)}^{\mathrm{GL}\left(F_{v}\right)}\left(\chi_{1 v}| |_{v}^{1 / 2}, \chi_{2 v}| |_{v}^{-1 / 2}\right)$ is the induced representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)$ on the space
$V\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right):=\left\{f: \mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}\left|f\left(\left(\begin{array}{cc}a & x \\ 0 & b\end{array}\right) g\right)=\left|a b^{-1}\right|_{v} \chi_{1 v}(a) \chi_{2 v}(b) f(g)\right\}\right.$.
The action of $\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)$ on $V\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)$ is by right translations. Since it is known that $B\left(F_{v}\right) N_{2}^{-}\left(F_{v}\right)$ is dense in $\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)$, any $f \in V\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)$ is completely determined by its values on elements of the form $\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 0 \\ * & 1\end{array}\right)$. So we get a model for $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)$ obtained by restricting functions in $V\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)$ to $N_{2}^{-}\left(F_{v}\right)$. We denote the space of functions on $N_{2}^{-}\left(F_{v}\right) \simeq F_{v}$ by $V\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)^{-}$. We recall some well-known facts about 'new vectors' in induced representations (see [7] and [36, Proposition 2.1.2]):

Proposition 4.3 Suppose the conductor of $\chi_{i v}$ is $\operatorname{Cond}\left(\chi_{i v}\right)=\mathfrak{f}_{\chi_{i v}}=\mathfrak{p}_{v}^{n_{i}}$, say. Then the conductor of $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)=\mathfrak{f}_{\Sigma_{v}}=\mathfrak{f}_{\chi_{1}} \mathfrak{f}_{\chi_{2}}=\mathfrak{p}_{v}^{n}$, with $n=n_{1}+n_{2}$. For $m \geq 0$ we define

$$
K_{01}\left(\mathfrak{p}^{m}\right):=\left\{\left(\begin{array}{cc}
a & b \\
c & d
\end{array}\right) \in \mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(\mathcal{O}_{v}\right): c \equiv 0, d \equiv 1\left(\mathfrak{p}^{m}\right)\right\},
$$

with the understanding that $K_{01}\left(\mathfrak{p}^{0}\right)=\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(\mathcal{O}_{v}\right)$. Then, the space of $K_{01}\left(\mathfrak{p}^{n}\right)$ invariant vectors in $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)$ is one-dimensional, say $\mathbb{C} f_{v}^{\text {new }}$. Moreover, this 'new-vector' as a function on $N^{-}\left(F_{v}\right)$ may be taken to be of the following shape:

- If $\chi_{1 v}$ and $\chi_{2 v}$ are ramified, then

$$
f_{v}^{\mathrm{new}}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
x & 1
\end{array}\right)= \begin{cases}\chi_{1 v}(x)^{-1}|x|^{-1 / 2}, & \text { if } \operatorname{val}(x)=n_{2}, \\
0, & \text { if } \operatorname{val}(x) \neq n_{2} .\end{cases}
$$

- If $\chi_{1 v}$ is unramified and $\chi_{2 v}$ is ramified, then

$$
f_{v}^{\text {new }}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
x & 1
\end{array}\right)= \begin{cases}\chi_{1 v}\left(\varpi_{v}\right)^{-n_{2}}\left|\varpi_{v}\right|^{-n_{2} / 2}, & \text { if } \operatorname{val}(x) \geq n_{2}, \\
0, & \text { if } \mathbf{v a l}(x)<n_{2}\end{cases}
$$

- If $\chi_{1 v}$ is ramified and $\chi_{2 v}$ is unramified, then

$$
f_{v}^{\text {new }}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
x & 1
\end{array}\right)= \begin{cases}\chi_{1 v}(x)^{-1} \chi_{2 v}(x)|x|^{-2}, & \text { if } \operatorname{val}(x) \leq 0 \\
0, & \text { if } \operatorname{val}(x)>0\end{cases}
$$

- If $\chi_{1 v}$ and $\chi_{2 v}$ are unramified, then we take $f_{v}^{\text {new }}=f_{v}^{\text {sp }}$, the spherical vector, i.e., the vector fixed by $\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(\mathcal{O}_{v}\right)$, normalized such that $f_{v}^{\operatorname{sp}}\left(k_{v}\right)=$ 1 for $k_{v} \in \operatorname{GL}_{2}\left(\mathcal{O}_{v}\right)$.

Now we consider the new-vector $f_{v}^{\text {new }}$ in the local Whittaker model. For the global additive character $\psi$, we will furthermore assume that the local $\psi_{v}$ is unramified, i.e., the largest fractional ideal on which $\psi_{v}$ is trivial is $\mathcal{O}_{v}$. For $f_{v} \in V\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)$, the corresponding $\psi_{v}^{-1}$-Whittaker function is given by the integral:

$$
w_{f_{v}}(g) \equiv w_{f_{v}, \psi_{v}^{-1}}(g)=\int_{N\left(F_{v}\right)} \psi_{v}(n) f_{v}\left(\mathrm{w}_{\circ}^{-1} n g\right) d n
$$

where $\mathrm{w}_{\circ}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0\end{array}\right)$. The map $f_{v} \mapsto w_{f_{v}}$ identifies the local induced representation $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)$ with its Whittaker model $\mathcal{W}\left(\Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right), \psi_{v}^{-1}\right)$. We have the following lemma for new vectors stated in terms of the Whittaker models:

Lemma 4.4 The space of $K_{01}\left(\mathfrak{p}^{n}\right)$-invariant vectors in $\mathcal{W}\left(\Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right), \psi_{v}^{-1}\right)$ is one-dimensional, and we may take as generator $w_{\Sigma_{v}}^{\text {new }}:=w_{f_{v}^{\text {new }}}$. Furthermore, there exists $t^{*}=\operatorname{diag}(t, 1)$ such that $w_{\Sigma_{v}}^{\text {new }}\left(t^{*}\right) \neq 0$, for some $t \in F_{v}^{\times}$.

Proof. First part of the lemma follows from [36, Proposition 2.12] and second part follows from Kirillov theory (see, for example [12, Section 3]).

We would like to take a convenient $t^{*}$ and compute the value $w_{\Sigma_{v}}^{\text {new }}\left(t^{*}\right)$. Towards this, to begin, suppose $v$ is a finite unramified place, i.e., $\Sigma_{v}$ admits
a $K_{v}$-fixed vector which is unique up to scalars; take $w_{\Sigma_{v}}^{\circ}$ as the unique $K_{v}$-fixed vector such that $w_{\Sigma_{v}}^{\circ}(1)=1$. On the other hand, $w_{f_{v}}^{\text {sp }}$ is also a $K_{v}$-fixed vector, and so there exists a $C_{v} \in \mathbb{C}^{\times}$such that $w_{f_{v}^{\mathrm{sp}}}=C_{v} w_{\Sigma_{v}}^{\circ}$; then $C_{v}=w_{f_{v}^{\mathrm{sp}}}(1)$. We have the well-known proposition ([8, Theorem 5.4], [38, Chapter 5, page 352]):

Proposition 4.5 Suppose $\chi_{1 v}$ and $\chi_{2 v}$ are unramified characters, and $f_{v}^{s p}$ is the spherical vector in the induced representation $\Sigma_{v}$, then

$$
C_{v}=w_{f_{v}}(1)=L\left(2, \chi_{1 v} \chi_{2 v}^{-1}\right)^{-1} .
$$

Let's note that in the usual Casselman-Shalika formula, one sees the value at $s=1$ of a local $L$-function, but recall in our case that for $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$ the inducing representation is $\chi_{1}(1 / 2) \times \chi_{2}(-1 / 2)$ which accounts for the $L$-value at $s=2$, since $L\left(1, \chi_{1 v}(1 / 2)\left(\chi_{2 v}(-1 / 2)\right)^{-1}\right)=L\left(2, \chi_{1 v} \chi_{2 v}^{-1}\right)$.

Let $S_{\chi_{i}}$ be the set of finite places where $\chi_{i}$ is ramified; then put $S_{\Sigma}=S_{\chi_{1}} \cup S_{\chi_{2}}$. Let $v \in S_{\Sigma}$. Applying Lemma 4.4, we take for $w_{\Sigma_{v}}^{\text {new }}$ the unique $K_{01}\left(\mathfrak{p}^{n}\right)$-fixed vector normalized such that $w_{\Sigma_{v}}^{\text {new }}\left(t^{*}\right)=1$. Since the space of new-vectors is one-dimensional, there exists $A_{v} \in \mathbb{C}^{\times}$such that $w_{f_{v}^{\text {new }}}=A_{v} w_{\Sigma_{v}}^{\text {new }}$. Hence, $A_{v}=w_{f_{v}}\left(\begin{array}{cc}t & 0 \\ 0 & 1\end{array}\right)$. The precise value of $A_{v}$ is given by the following

Proposition 4.6 Let $f_{v}^{\text {new }}$ be the new vector in the induced representation $\Sigma_{v}$ as in Proposition 4.3. Then

$$
A_{v}=w_{f_{v}^{\text {new }}}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
t & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)= \begin{cases}q_{v}^{-n_{2} / 2} \chi_{2 v}\left(\varpi^{-n_{2}}\right) \mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2 v}\right), & \text { if } \chi_{2 v} \text { is ramified } \\
\operatorname{Vol}\left(\mathcal{O}_{v}\right), & \text { if } \chi_{2 v} \text { is unramified } .\end{cases}
$$

Proof. Before we begin, let's recall the following well-known fact about local Gauß sums: if the conductor of $\psi_{v}$ is $\mathcal{O}_{v}$, then

$$
\int_{\mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}} \psi_{v}(a \varepsilon) \chi_{v}(\varepsilon) d^{\times} \varepsilon= \begin{cases}\chi_{v}^{-1}\left(a \varpi^{e}\right) \mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{v}\right), & \text { if }^{\operatorname{sal}}{ }_{v}(a)=-e, \\ 0, & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

where $e=\operatorname{cond}\left(\chi_{v}\right)$. Thus, by the definition of the Whittaker function we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{f_{v}^{\text {ess }}}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
t & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right) & =\int_{N\left(F_{v}\right)} f\left(\mathrm{w}_{\circ}^{-1} u\left(\begin{array}{l}
t \\
\\
1
\end{array}\right)\right) \psi_{v}(u) d u \\
& =\int_{F_{v}^{\times}} f\left(\mathrm{w}_{\circ}^{-1}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & x \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
t & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)\right) \psi_{v}(x) d x=\int_{F_{v}^{X}} f\left(\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & -1 \\
t & x
\end{array}\right)\right) \psi_{v}(x) d x .
\end{aligned}
$$

Make the substitution $x \longmapsto t x$, and use $\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & -1 \\ t & t x\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}x^{-1} & -1 \\ 0 & t x\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}1 & 0 \\ x^{-1} & 1\end{array}\right)$ to rewrite the last integral as

$$
\begin{aligned}
|t|_{v} \int_{F_{v}^{\times}} f\left(\left(\begin{array}{cc}
x^{-1} & -1 \\
0 & t x
\end{array}\right)\right. & \left.\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
x^{-1} & 1
\end{array}\right)\right) \psi_{v}(t x) d x \\
& =|t|_{v} \int_{F_{v}^{\times}} \chi_{1 v}(x)^{-1} \chi_{2 v}(t x)\left|x^{-2} t^{-1}\right|_{v} f\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
x^{-1} & 1
\end{array}\right) \psi_{v}(t x) d x \\
& =\sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} \int_{\varpi_{v}^{n} \mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}} \chi_{1 v}(x)^{-1} \chi_{2 v}(t x)\left|x^{-2}\right|_{v} f\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
x^{-1} & 1
\end{array}\right) \psi_{v}(t x) d x .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now to compute $w_{f_{v} \text { ess }}\left(\begin{array}{cc}t & 0 \\ 0 & 1\end{array}\right)$ using the very last expression, we consider three cases:

1. $\chi_{1 v}$ and $\chi_{2 v}$ are both ramified. In this case, by Proposition 4.3, we have $f\left(\begin{array}{cc}1 & 0 \\ x^{-1} & 1\end{array}\right)=0$ for all $x$ such that $\operatorname{val}\left(x^{-1}\right) \neq n_{2}$. Hence only the summand for $n=-n_{2}$ survives to get:

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{f_{v}^{\text {ess }}}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
t & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right) & =\int_{\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}} \mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}}|x|_{v}^{-2} \chi_{1 v}(x)^{-1} \chi_{2 v}(t x) \chi_{1 v}(x)|x|_{v}^{\frac{1}{2}} \psi_{v}(t x) d x \\
& \left.=\int_{\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}} \mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}}|x|_{v}^{\frac{-3}{2}} \chi_{2 v}(t x) \psi_{v}(t x) d x \quad \text { (put } x=\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}} y\right) \\
& =\left|\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}}\right|_{v}^{\frac{-3}{2}} \int_{\mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}} \chi_{2 v}\left(t \varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}} y\right) \psi_{v}\left(t \varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}} y\right)\left|\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}}\right|_{v} d y \\
& =\left|\varpi_{v}\right|_{v}^{\frac{n_{2}}{2}} \chi_{2 v}\left(\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}}\right) \int_{\mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}} \chi_{2 v}(t y) \psi_{v}\left(\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}} t y\right) d^{\times} y .
\end{aligned}
$$

Recall that on $\mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}, d y=d^{\times} y$. Note that

$$
\int_{\mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}} \chi_{2 v}(y) \psi_{v}\left(\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}} t y\right) d^{\times} y \neq 0 \Leftrightarrow \operatorname{val}\left(\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}} t\right)=-n_{2} \Leftrightarrow t \in \mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times} .
$$

Put $t y=z$ to get

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{f_{v}^{\text {ss }}}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
t & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right) & =\left|\varpi_{v}\right|_{v}^{\frac{n_{2}}{2}} \chi_{2 v}\left(\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}}\right) \int_{\mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}} \chi_{2 v}(z) \psi_{v}\left(\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}} z\right) d^{\times} z \\
& =q_{v}^{-n_{2} / 2} \chi_{2 v}\left(\varpi^{-n_{2}}\right) \mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2 v}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

2. $\chi_{1 v}$ is unramified and $\chi_{2 v}$ is ramified. In this case, by Proposition 4.3, we have $f\left(\begin{array}{cc}1 & 0 \\ x^{-1} & 1\end{array}\right)=0$, for $n>-n_{2}$. Hence we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& w_{f_{v}^{\text {ess }}}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
t & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right) \\
& =\sum_{n \leq-n_{2}} \int_{\varpi_{v}^{n} \mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}}|x|_{v}^{-2} \chi_{1 v}(x)^{-1} \chi_{2 v}(t x) \chi_{1 v}\left(\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}}\right)\left|\varpi_{v}\right|_{v}^{-n_{2} / 2} \psi_{v}(t x) d x
\end{aligned}
$$

(now put $x=\varpi_{v}^{n} y$ );

$$
=\sum_{n \leq-n_{2}}\left|\varpi_{v}\right|_{v}^{-n-n_{2} / 2} \chi_{1 v}\left(\varpi_{v}^{-n-n_{2}}\right) \chi_{2 v}\left(\varpi_{v}^{n}\right) \int_{\mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}} \chi_{2 v}(t y) \psi_{v}\left(t \varpi_{v}^{n} y\right) d^{\times} y .
$$

For the inner integral we have:

$$
\int_{\mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}} \chi_{2 v}(y) \psi_{v}\left(\varpi_{v}^{n} t y\right) d^{\times} y \neq 0 \Leftrightarrow \operatorname{val}\left(\varpi_{v}^{n} t\right)=-n_{2} .
$$

Let's take $t \in \mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}$, then only the summand for $n=-n_{2}$ will be nonzero, and we get:

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{f_{v}^{\text {ess }}}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
t & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right) & =q_{v}^{-n_{2} / 2} \chi_{2 v}\left(\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}}\right) \int_{\mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}} \chi_{2 v}(t y) \psi_{v}\left(t \varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}} y\right) d^{\times} y \\
& =q_{v}^{-n_{2} / 2} \chi_{2 v}\left(\varpi_{v}^{-n_{2}}\right) \mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2 v}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

3. $\chi_{1 v}$ is ramified and $\chi_{2 v}$ is unramified. In this case, by Proposition 4.3 , we have nonzero summands corresponding to $n \geq 0$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
w_{f_{v}^{\text {ess }}}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
t & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right) & =\sum_{n \geq 0} \int_{\varpi_{v}^{n} \mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}}|x|_{v}^{-2} \chi_{1 v}(x)^{-1} \chi_{2 v}(t x) \chi_{1 v}(x) \chi_{2 v}(x)^{-1}|x|_{v}^{2} \psi_{v}(t x) d x \\
& =\sum_{n \geq 0} \int_{\varpi_{v}^{n} \mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}} \chi_{2 v}(t) \psi_{v}(t x) d x .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now we take $t \in \mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}$so that $\chi_{2 v}(t)=1$ and $\psi_{v}(t x)=1$ for $x \in \varpi_{v}^{n} \mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}$ and $n \geq 0$; this gives:

$$
\sum_{n \geq 0} \int_{\varpi_{v}^{n} \mathcal{O}_{v}^{\times}} d x=\operatorname{Vol}\left(\mathcal{O}_{v}\right) .
$$

For future reference, let's define

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{\Sigma}:=\prod_{v \in S_{\Sigma}} A_{v} \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 4.1.4 Integral representation of $L_{f}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)$

Let's go back to the period integral in Equation (4.2) and its expression as a product of the local zeta integrals involving Whittaker vectors:

$$
\begin{equation*}
I\left(s, \phi_{\Pi}, E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}\right)\right)=\prod_{v} \Psi\left(s, w_{\Pi_{v}}, w_{E_{v}}\right) . \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

We now make a judicious choice of Whittaker vectors and compute the zeta integrals as follows:
(1) If $v \notin S_{\Sigma} \cup S_{\infty}$, take $w_{\Pi_{v}}=w_{\Pi_{v}}^{\text {ess }}$ which is the essential vector as in [21], and $w_{E_{v}}=w_{f_{v}^{\text {sp }}}$, then we have:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Psi\left(s, w_{\Pi_{v}}^{\mathrm{ess}}, w_{f_{v} \mathrm{sp}}^{\text {sp }}=\right. & \int_{N_{2}\left(F_{v}\right) \backslash \mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)} w_{\Pi_{v}}^{\mathrm{ess}}\left(\iota\left(g_{v}\right)\right) w_{f_{v}^{\mathrm{sp}}}\left(g_{v}\right)\left|\operatorname{det}\left(g_{v}\right)\right|_{v}^{s-\frac{1}{2}} d g_{v} \\
= & L\left(2, \chi_{1 v} \chi_{2 v}^{-1}\right)^{-1} \int_{N_{2}\left(F_{v}\right) \backslash \operatorname{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)} w_{\Pi_{v}}^{\mathrm{ess}_{v}}\left(\iota\left(g_{v}\right)\right) w_{v}^{\circ}\left(g_{v}\right) \\
& \times\left|\operatorname{det}\left(g_{v}\right)\right|_{v}^{s-\frac{1}{2}} d g_{v} \\
= & L\left(2, \chi_{1 v} \chi_{2 v}^{-1}\right)^{-1} L\left(s, \Pi_{v} \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let's define

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{\Sigma}:=L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(2, \chi_{1} \chi_{2}^{-1}\right)^{-1}=\prod_{v \in S_{\Sigma}} L_{v}\left(2, \chi_{1 v} \chi_{2 v}^{-1}\right)^{-1} . \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

(2) If $v \in S_{\Sigma}$, take $w_{E_{v}}=w_{f_{v} \text { new }}$, and let $w_{\Pi_{v}}$ be the unique Whittaker function whose restriction to $\iota\left(\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)\right)$ is supported on the double coset $N_{2}\left(F_{v}\right) t^{*} K_{01}\left(\operatorname{cond}\left(\Sigma_{v}\right)\right)$, and on this double coset it's given by $w_{\Pi_{v}}\left(\iota\left(n t^{*} k\right)\right)=\psi(n)$, for all $n \in N_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)$ and all $k \in K_{01}\left(\operatorname{cond}\left(\Sigma_{v}\right)\right)$.The existence and uniqueness of $w_{\Pi_{v}}$ follows from Kirillov theory ( $[1$, Section 5]). So,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Psi\left(s, w_{\Pi_{v}}, w_{f_{v}^{\text {ess }}}\right) & =\int_{N_{2}\left(F_{v}\right) \backslash \operatorname{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)} w_{\Pi_{v}}\left(\iota\left(g_{v}\right)\right) w_{f_{v}^{\text {new }}}\left(g_{v}\right)\left|\operatorname{det}\left(g_{v}\right)\right|_{v}^{s-\frac{1}{2}} d g_{v} \\
& =A_{v} \int_{N_{2}\left(F_{v}\right) \backslash \operatorname{GL}_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)} w_{\Pi_{v}}\left(\iota\left(g_{v}\right)\right) w_{\Sigma_{v}}^{\text {new }}\left(g_{v}\right)\left|\operatorname{det}\left(g_{v}\right)\right|_{v}^{s-\frac{1}{2}} d g_{v} \\
& =A_{v} \operatorname{Vol}\left(K_{01}\left(\operatorname{cond}\left(\Sigma_{v}\right)\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Let's define

$$
\begin{equation*}
V_{\Sigma}:=\prod_{v \in S_{\Sigma}} \operatorname{Vol}\left(K_{01}\left(\operatorname{cond}\left(\Sigma_{v}\right)\right)\right) \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

(3) If $v \in S_{\infty}$, let $w_{\Pi_{v}}$ and $w_{E_{v}}$ be arbitrary nonzero vectors. (Later these will be certain 'cohomological vectors'.)

Let's note that the function $\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}$ in the induced space $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$ is taken accordingly:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}=\varphi_{\infty} \otimes \varphi_{f}, \quad \varphi_{f}=\otimes_{v \notin S_{\Sigma}} f_{v}^{\text {sp }} \otimes_{v \in S_{\Sigma}} f_{v}^{\text {new }} \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\varphi_{\infty}$ some cohomogical vector. Similarly, the cusp form $\phi_{\Pi}$ is chosen as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi_{\Pi}=\phi_{\infty} \otimes \phi_{f}, \quad \phi_{f}=\otimes_{v \notin S_{\infty}} \phi_{v}, \quad \phi_{v} \text { corresponds to } w_{\Pi_{v}}, \tag{4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\phi_{\infty}$ some cohomogical vector.
With the above choice of Whittaker vectors in Equation (4.8) becomes (after multiplying and dividing by suitable local factors and after using the definitions in Equations (4.7), (4.9) and (4.10)):

$$
\begin{aligned}
& I\left(s, \phi_{\Pi}, E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}\right)\right)= \\
& \prod_{v \in S_{\infty}} \Psi_{v}\left(s, w_{\Pi_{v}}, w_{E_{v}}\right) \cdot \frac{A_{\Sigma} \cdot V_{\Sigma} \cdot L_{\Sigma}}{\prod_{v \in S_{\Sigma}} L\left(s, \Pi_{v} \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)\right)} \cdot \frac{L_{f}\left(s, \Pi \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)}{L_{f}\left(2, \chi_{1} \chi_{2}^{-1}\right)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

For the factors for $v \in S_{\infty}$, suppose $s=1 / 2$ is critical (as we will take a little later on), then by definition of criticality, $L\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi_{v} \times \Sigma_{v}\right)$ is finite. Also $\frac{\Psi\left(s, w_{\Pi_{v}}, w_{f_{v}}\right)}{L_{v}\left(s, \Pi_{v} \times \Sigma_{v}\right)}$ is holomorphic for all $s \in \mathbb{C}$, hence

$$
\Psi\left(\frac{1}{2}, w_{\Pi_{v}}, w_{f_{v}}\right):=\left.\left(\frac{\Psi\left(s, w_{\Pi_{v}}, w_{f_{v}}\right)}{L_{v}\left(s, \Pi_{v} \times \Sigma_{v}\right)}\right)\right|_{s=1 / 2} \cdot L\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi_{v} \times \Sigma_{v}\right)
$$

is finite. Furthermore, the local $L$-factors are nonzero and the finite part of a global $L$-function $L_{f}\left(s, \Pi \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)$ has an analytic continuation for all $s$. Hence we get, at $s=\frac{1}{2}$ :
$I\left(\frac{1}{2}, \phi_{\Pi}, E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}\right)\right)$

$$
\begin{equation*}
=\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}} \Psi_{v}\left(\frac{1}{2}, w_{\Pi_{v}}, w_{E_{v}}\right) \frac{A_{\Sigma} \cdot V_{\Sigma} \cdot L_{\Sigma}}{L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)} \cdot \frac{L_{f}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)}{L_{f}\left(2, \chi_{1} \chi_{2}^{-1}\right)}, \tag{4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

where, $L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)=\prod_{v \in S_{\Sigma}} L_{v}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi_{v} \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)\right)$.

### 4.2 Special values of $L$-functions on $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}$

### 4.2.1 Local Langlands correspondence for $\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{F})$

In this subsection, we recall the dictionary to attach an $L$-function to a given irreducible admissible representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{F}), \mathbb{F}=\mathbb{R}$ or $\mathbb{C}$, using Langlands classification. (See [24] for details and future reference.) It says that there is a well-defined bijection between the set of all equivalence classes of n-dimensional semisimple complex representations of Weil group of $\mathbb{F}$, denoted $W_{\mathbb{F}}$, and the set of all equivalence classes of irreducible admissible representations of $\mathrm{GL}_{n}(\mathbb{F})$. We will discuss real and complex case separately:

$$
\mathbb{F}=\mathbb{R}
$$

The building blocks for irreducible admissible representations of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{R})$ are the representations of $\mathrm{GL}_{1}(\mathbb{R})$ and $\mathrm{GL}_{2}(\mathbb{R})$. Thus the building blocks will be:

$$
\left.\mathbb{1} \otimes\left|\left.\right|_{\mathbb{R}} ^{t}, \quad \text { or } \quad \operatorname{sgn} \otimes\right|\right|_{\mathbb{R}} ^{t} \rightsquigarrow \text { for } \mathrm{GL}_{1}(\mathbb{R}),
$$

and

$$
D_{l} \otimes|\operatorname{det}|_{\mathbb{R}}^{t} \rightsquigarrow \text { for } \mathrm{GL}_{2}(\mathbb{R}),
$$

for some $t \in \mathbb{C}$.
On the other hand, the Weil group of $\mathbb{R}$, denoted as $W_{\mathbb{R}}$, is the non split extension of $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$by $\mathbb{Z} / 2 \mathbb{Z}$ given by

$$
W_{\mathbb{R}}=\mathbb{C}^{\times} \cup j \mathbb{C}^{\times},
$$

where $j^{2}=-1$ and $j c j^{-1}=\bar{c}$.
The one dimensional representations $\phi$ of $W_{\mathbb{R}}$ are parametrized by a sgn and a complex parameter $t$ as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (+, t): \phi(z)=|z|_{\mathbb{R}}^{t} \text { and } \phi(j)=+1, \\
& (-, t): \phi(z)=|z|_{\mathbb{R}}^{t} \text { and } \phi(j)=-1 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Furthermore, the irreducible two dimensional semi-simple representation $\phi$ of $W_{\mathbb{R}}$, up to equivalence, is classified by a pair $(l, t)$ with $l \in \mathbb{Z}, l \geq 1$ and $2 t \in \mathbb{C}$.

Lemma 4.14 Every finite dimensional semi-simple representation $\phi$ of $W_{\mathbb{R}}$ is fully reducible, and each irreducible representation has dimension one or two.

Now let $\phi$ be an 3 -dimensional semi simple complex representation of $W_{\mathbb{R}}$. By the above Lemma, $\phi$ is fully reducible, and on the one and two-dimensional building blocks, the correspondence is given by

$$
(+, t) \longrightarrow \mathbb{1} \otimes\left|\left.\right|_{\mathbb{R}} ^{t}\right.
$$

$$
\begin{gathered}
(-, t) \longrightarrow \operatorname{sgn} \otimes\left|\left.\right|_{\mathbb{R}} ^{t}\right. \\
(l, t) \longrightarrow D_{l} \otimes|\operatorname{det}|_{\mathbb{R}}^{t} .
\end{gathered}
$$

To each finite dimensional semi-simple complex representation $\phi$ of the Weil group of $\mathbb{R}$, is associated a local $L$ factor with certain nice properties. The formula is:

$$
L(s, \phi)= \begin{cases}L\left(s, \phi_{1}\right) L\left(s, \phi_{2}\right), & \text { if } \phi=\phi_{1} \oplus \phi_{2} \\ \pi^{-(s+t) / 2} \Gamma\left(\frac{s+t}{2}\right), & \text { if } \phi \mapsto(+, t) \\ \pi^{-(s+t+1) / 2} \Gamma\left(\frac{s+t+1}{2}\right), & \text { if } \phi \mapsto(-, t) \\ 2(2 \pi)^{-\left(s+t+\frac{l}{2}\right)} \Gamma\left(s+t+\frac{l}{2}\right), & \text { if } \phi \mapsto(l, t) \\ \mathbb{F}=\mathbb{C}\end{cases}
$$

For $z \in \mathbb{C}$, let $[z]=z /|z|$. The building blocks for irreducible addmissible representations of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{C})$ are the representations of $\mathrm{GL}_{1}(\mathbb{C})$ given by

$$
z \longmapsto[z]^{l}|z|_{\mathbb{C}}^{t}
$$

where $|z|_{\mathbb{C}}=z \bar{z}$ and $l \in \mathbb{Z}, t \in \mathbb{C}$.
On the other hand, the Weil group of $\mathbb{C}$ is given by $W_{\mathbb{C}}=\mathbb{C}^{\times}$. Since $\mathbb{C}^{\times}$is abelian, such a representation $\phi$ is diagonalizable and hence is the direct sum of one-dimensional representations, each classified by a pair $(l, t)$. Thus the correspondence is given by

$$
(l, t) \longmapsto[z]^{l} \cdot|z|^{t} .
$$

The local $L$-factor corresponding to a one dimensional representation $\phi$ of $W_{\mathbb{C}}$ is

$$
L(s, \phi)=2(2 \pi)^{-\left(s+t+\frac{|l|}{2}\right)} \Gamma\left(s+t+\frac{|l|}{2}\right), \text { if } \phi \mapsto(l, t) .
$$

For $\phi$ reducible, $L(s, \phi)$ is the product of the $L$-factors of the irreducible constituents of $\phi$.

### 4.2.2 Critical set for $L$-functions

Consider the Rankin-Selberg $L$-function $L(s, \Pi \otimes \chi)$ where $\Pi$ is a cuspidal automorphic representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)$, and $\chi$ is an algebraic Hecke character of $F^{\times} \backslash \mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times}$.
Definition: We say an integer $m$ is critical for $L(s, \Pi \otimes \chi)$ if both

$$
L_{\infty}\left(s, \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \chi_{\infty}\right) \text { and } L_{\infty}\left(1-s, \Pi_{\infty}^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{\infty}^{\vee}\right)
$$

are regular, that is, both the $L$-factors at infinity on either side of the functional equation have no poles at $s=m$, where

$$
L_{\infty}\left(s, \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \chi_{\infty}\right)=\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}} L_{v}\left(s, \Pi_{v} \otimes \chi_{v}\right)
$$

We will find critical set for $L(s, \Pi \otimes \chi)$ separately for totally real field and CM field.

$$
F: \text { totally real }
$$

In Section 3.3.1, we have seen that without loss of generality we can take $\Pi$ as follows: $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$ such that for each $v \in S_{r}, \mu_{v}=\left(n_{v}, 0,-n_{v}\right)$; with $n_{v} \geq 0$. Further let $\chi^{0}$ be a finite order algebraic Hecke character. For each $v \in S_{r}, \chi_{v}^{0}$ is character from $\mathbb{R}^{\times}$to $\mathbb{R}^{\times}$of finite order. Let us denote $\chi_{v}^{0}=\varepsilon_{\chi_{v}}:=(\mathrm{sgn})^{e_{\chi_{v}}}$ with $e_{\chi_{v}} \in\{0,1\}$.
Since $F$ is totally real number field, $S_{\infty}=S_{r}$. As in Proposition 3.9, for each $v \in S_{r}$ we have

$$
\Pi_{v}=\operatorname{Ind}_{P_{(2,1)}(\mathbb{R})}^{\mathrm{GL}}\left(D_{l_{1 v}}|\operatorname{det}|^{w / 2} \otimes \varepsilon_{\Pi_{v}}|\operatorname{det}|^{w / 2}\right),
$$

where $l_{1 v}=2 \mu_{1}^{v}+2=2 n_{v}+2$, and $w=2 \mu_{2}^{v}=0$. Using these values we get

$$
\Pi_{v} \otimes \chi_{v}=\operatorname{Ind}_{P(\mathbb{R})}^{G \mathbb{R}_{3}(\mathbb{R})}\left(D_{2 n_{v}+2} \otimes \varepsilon_{\Pi_{v}} \varepsilon_{\chi_{v}}\right) .
$$

Reduction to the case of $\varepsilon_{\Pi_{v}}=\mathbb{1}:$ Take $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$ as before, and fix a nontrivial quadratic character $\eta$ of $F$ such that $\eta_{v}=\varepsilon_{\Pi_{v}}$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$.
(Such an $\eta$ exists; consider the character attached to a quadratic extension obtained by adjoining the square root of an element that is negative for a prescribed set of embeddings-this element may be produced using weakapproximation in $F$.) Then, $\Pi \otimes \eta$ also has cohomology with respect to $\mu$, and it is easy to see that $\varepsilon_{\Pi_{v} \otimes \eta_{v}}=\mathbb{1}$. Furthermore, to study the critical values of $L(s, \Pi \otimes \chi)$, it suffices to consider $L(s,(\Pi \otimes \eta) \otimes(\chi \otimes \eta))$. Henceforth, we will assume:

1. $\mu=\left(\mu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}, \mu_{v}=\left(n_{v}, 0,-n_{v}\right)$ with $n_{v} \geq 0$, and
2. $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$, and $\varepsilon_{\Pi_{v}}=\mathbb{1}$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$.

Thus after the above reduction, we get for each $v \in S_{r}$

$$
\Pi_{v} \otimes \chi_{v}=\operatorname{Ind}_{P(\mathbb{R})}^{G \mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{R})}\left(D_{2 n_{v}+2} \otimes \varepsilon_{\chi_{v}}\right) .
$$

Case 1. $\chi_{v}=\mathbb{1}$ for all $v \in S_{r}$
This case may also be described as $e_{\chi_{v}}=0$ for all $v \in S_{r}$. We have

$$
\Pi_{v} \otimes \chi_{v}=\operatorname{Ind}_{P(\mathbb{R})}^{\mathrm{GL}(\mathbb{R})}\left(D_{2 n_{v}+2} \otimes \mathbb{1}\right)
$$

Now for each $v \in S_{r}$, dual representation of a pair $\Pi \otimes \chi$ is given by

$$
\Pi_{v}^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{v}^{\vee}=\Pi_{v}^{\vee} \otimes \bar{\chi}_{v}=\Pi_{v} \otimes \chi_{v}
$$

as discrete series representation is self-dual.
Using Section 4.2.1, by the local Langlands correspondence, the associated L-factors are:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& L_{\infty}\left(s, \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \chi_{\infty}\right)=\prod_{v \in S_{r}}\left(2(2 \pi)^{-\left(s+\frac{2 n_{v}+2}{2}\right)} \Gamma\left(s+\frac{2 n_{v}+2}{2}\right) \pi^{-\frac{s}{2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{s}{2}\right)\right) \\
& \approx \prod_{v \in S_{r}} \Gamma\left(s+n_{v}+1\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{s}{2}\right), \\
& L_{\infty}\left(1-s, \Pi_{\infty}^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{\infty}^{\vee}\right) \approx \prod_{v \in S_{r}} \Gamma\left(1-s+n_{v}+1\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{1-s}{2}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

where, by $\approx$, we mean up to nonzero constants and exponential functions which are holomorphic and nonvanishing everywhere, and hence irrelevant for computing the critical points.

It is known that for an integer $m, \Gamma(m)$ is finite if and only if $m \geq 1$, i.e., $m \in\{1,2,3, \ldots\}$. Hence $s=m$ is critical if for each $v \in S_{r}$

$$
m+n_{v}+1 \geq 1, \frac{m}{2} \geq 1 ; \quad 2-m+n_{v} \geq 1, \frac{1-m}{2} \geq 1
$$

Now it is an easy exercise to see that:
Critical set for $L(s, \Pi \times \chi)=\left\{1-n_{\mathrm{ev}}, \ldots,-3,-1,2,4, \ldots, n_{\mathrm{ev}}\right\}$,
where,

$$
n_{\mathrm{ev}}=2\left[\frac{n+1}{2}\right]
$$

$=$ the largest even positive integer less than or equal to $n+1$,
and $n=\min _{v \in S_{r}}\left\{n_{v}\right\}$.
Note that if $n=0$ (this is the case, for example if $\mu=0$, i.e., the case of constant coefficients for the cohomology of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}$ ) then the critical set is empty.

Case 2. $\chi_{v}=\operatorname{sgn}$ for all $v \in S_{r}$.
It may also be described as $e_{\chi_{v}}=1$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$. In this case we have $\Pi_{v} \otimes \chi_{v}=\operatorname{Ind}_{P_{(2,1)}(\mathbb{R})}^{\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{R})}\left(D_{2 n_{v}+2} \otimes \operatorname{sgn}\right)$ and again using Section 4.2.1 the associated $L$-factors are:

$$
\begin{aligned}
L_{\infty}\left(s, \Pi_{\infty} \times \chi_{\infty}\right) & \approx \prod_{v \in S_{r}} \Gamma\left(s+n_{v}+1\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{s+1}{2}\right), \\
L_{\infty}\left(1-s, \Pi_{\infty}^{\vee} \times \chi_{\infty}^{\vee}\right) & \approx \prod_{v \in S_{r}} \Gamma\left(1-s+n_{v}+1\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{2-s}{2}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then an integer $m$ is critical if the following holds:

$$
m+n_{v}+1 \geq 1, \frac{m+1}{2} \geq 1 ; \quad 2-m+n_{v} \geq 1, \frac{2-m}{2} \geq 1
$$

It is an easy exercise now to deduce that:

Critical set for $L(s, \Pi \times \chi)=\left\{1-n_{\text {od }}, \ldots,-2,0,1,3, \ldots, n_{\text {od }}\right\}$,
where,
$n_{\text {od }}=2\left[\frac{n}{2}\right]+1=$ the largest odd integer less than or equal to $n+1$.
Note that in this case, the critical set is always nonempty.

Case 3: There exist two places $v_{1}, v_{2} \in S_{\infty}$ such that $\varepsilon_{\Pi_{v_{1}}}=\varepsilon_{\chi_{v_{1}}}$ and $\varepsilon_{\Pi_{v_{2}}} \neq \varepsilon_{\chi_{v_{2}}}$.

Then in the expression for $L_{\infty}\left(s, \Pi_{\infty} \times \chi_{\infty}\right)$ we would have as a factor: $\Gamma\left(\frac{s}{2}\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{s+1}{2}\right)$ and it is easy to see that in this situation there are no critical points; whence, we will not consider this case.

$$
F: C M \text { field }
$$

As in Proposition 3.13, let $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3}\right)$ be a "parallel" weight written as $\mu=$ $\left(\mu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$ with $\mu_{v}=\left(n_{1}, 0, n_{2} ;-n_{2}, 0,-n_{1}\right)$ for integers $n_{1}, n_{2}$ such that $n_{1} \geq$ $0 \geq n_{2}$, and suppose $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$. Let $\chi$ be an algebraic Hecke character of $F^{\times} \backslash \mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times}$of type $\left(\mathrm{A}_{0}\right)$ such that $\chi_{\infty}\left(z_{\infty}\right)=\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}}\left(\frac{z_{v}}{\left|z_{v}\right|}\right)^{-f}$ for some $f \in \mathbb{Z}$. Comparing with the general form of an algebraic Hecke character, we get $f \equiv 0(\bmod 2)$, that is, $f$ is even. Put $f=2 t$ for some $t \in \mathbb{Z}$. Hence we have $\chi_{\infty}(z)=z^{-t} \bar{z}^{t}$.
For each $v \in S_{\infty}$, we have

$$
\Pi_{v}=\operatorname{Ind}_{B(\mathbb{C})}^{\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{C})}\left(z^{n_{1}+1} \bar{z}^{-n_{1}-1} \otimes \mathbb{1} \otimes z^{n_{2}-1} \bar{z}^{-n_{2}+1}\right)
$$

Then, on tensoring with $\chi_{v}$ we get

$$
\Pi_{v} \otimes \chi_{v}=\operatorname{Ind}_{B(\mathbb{C})}^{\mathrm{GL}(\mathbb{C})}\left(z^{a_{1}} \bar{z}^{b_{1}} \otimes z^{a_{2}} \bar{z}^{b_{2}} \otimes z^{a_{3}} \bar{z}^{b_{3}}\right)
$$

with the cuspidal parameters

$$
a=\left(a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}\right)=\left(n_{1}+1-t,-t, n_{2}-1-t\right),
$$

and

$$
b=\left(b_{1}, b_{2}, b_{3}\right)=\left(-n_{1}-1+t, t,-n_{2}+1+t\right) .
$$

Again using Section 4.2.1, the associated local $L$-factor is:

$$
\begin{aligned}
L\left(s, \Pi_{v} \otimes \chi_{v}\right) & =\prod_{i=1}^{3} L\left(s, z^{a_{i} \bar{z}^{b_{i}}}\right) \\
& \left.=\prod_{i=1}^{3} 2(2 \pi)^{-\left(s+\frac{a_{i}+b_{i}}{2}+\frac{\left|a_{i}-b_{i}\right|}{2}\right.}\right) \Gamma\left(s+\frac{a_{i}+b_{i}}{2}+\frac{\left|a_{i}-b_{i}\right|}{2}\right) \\
& \approx \prod_{i=1}^{3} \Gamma\left(s+\frac{a_{i}+b_{i}}{2}+\frac{\left|a_{i}-b_{i}\right|}{2}\right) \\
& \approx \Gamma\left(s+\frac{\left|2 n_{1}+2-2 t\right|}{2}\right) \Gamma\left(s+\frac{|-2 t|}{2}\right) \\
& =\Gamma\left(s+\left|n_{1}+1-t\right|\right) \Gamma(s+|t|) \Gamma\left(s+\left|n_{2}-1-t\right|\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

where, by $\approx$, we mean up to nonzero constants and exponential functions.

Similarly, look at the dual representation

$$
\Pi_{v}^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{v}^{\vee}=\operatorname{Ind}_{B(\mathbb{C})}^{\mathrm{GL}_{3}(\mathbb{C})}\left(z^{c_{1}} \bar{z}^{d_{1}} \otimes z^{c_{2}} \bar{z}^{d_{2}} \otimes z^{c_{3}} \bar{z}^{d_{3}}\right)
$$

with the cuspidal parameters

$$
c=\left(c_{1}, c_{2}, c_{3}\right)=\left(-n_{2}+1+t, t,-n_{1}-1+t\right),
$$

and

$$
d=\left(d_{1}, d_{2}, d_{3}\right)=\left(n_{2}-1-t,-t, n_{1}+1-t\right) .
$$

Now one can easily check that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& L\left(1-s, \Pi_{v}^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{v}^{\vee}\right) \\
& =L\left(1-s, \Pi_{v} \otimes \chi_{v}\right)=\Gamma\left(1-s+\left|n_{1}+1-t\right|\right) \Gamma(1-s+|t|) \Gamma\left(1-s+\left|n_{2}-1-t\right|\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

We will separate this into cases depending on whether $t$ is positive or negative.

Case 1: $t>0$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$.
This implies $n_{2}-1-t \leq 0$ as $n_{2}$ is non-positive.
Case 1a. $n_{1}+1-t \geq 0$.
Using Section 4.2.1, the associated $L$-factors are:

$$
L_{\infty}\left(s, \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \chi_{\infty}\right) \approx \prod_{v \in S_{c}} \Gamma\left(s+n_{1}+1-t\right) \Gamma(s+t) \Gamma\left(s-n_{2}+1+t\right)
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& L_{\infty}\left(1-s, \Pi_{\infty}^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{\infty}^{\vee}\right) \\
& \quad \approx \prod_{v \in S_{c}} \Gamma\left(1-s+n_{1}+1-t\right) \Gamma(1-s+t) \Gamma\left(1-s-n_{2}+1+t\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the definition of criticality of $\Gamma$ functions, an integer $m \in \mathbb{Z}$ is critical if the following inequalities hold for all $v \in S_{c}$ :

$$
m+n_{1}+1-t \geq 1, \quad m+t \geq 1, \quad m-n_{2}+1+t \geq 1
$$

and

$$
1-m+n_{1}+1-t \geq 1, \quad 1-m+t \geq 1, \quad 1-m-n_{2}+1+t \geq 1 .
$$

On solving above inequalities we get:

$$
m \geq 1-t ; m \geq t-n_{1}, \text { and } m \leq t ; m \leq 1-t+n_{1} .
$$

Consider following two cases:

- If $n_{1} \leq 2 t-1$ for all $v \in S_{c}$. Then it is easy to check that: Critical set for $L(s, \Pi \times \chi)=\left\{m \in \mathbb{Z} \mid t-n_{1} \leq m \leq n_{1}+1-t\right\}$. In this case critical set is non-empty only if $n_{1} \geq t$.
- If $n_{1} \geq 2 t$ for all $v$. Again it is an easy exercise now to see that:

$$
\text { Critical set for } L(s, \Pi \times \chi)=\{m \in \mathbb{Z} \mid 1-t \leq m \leq t\}
$$

Note that under the assumption $t$ is positive, the critical set is always non-empty.

Case 1b. $n_{1}+1-t \leq 0$ for all $v \in S_{c}$.
Recall $n_{2}-1-t \leq 0$. For each $v \in S_{c}$ the associated local $L$-factors is:

$$
L\left(s, \Pi_{v} \otimes \chi_{v}\right) \approx \Gamma\left(s-n_{1}-1+t\right) \Gamma(s+t) \Gamma\left(s-n_{2}+1+t\right)
$$

and

$$
L\left(1-s, \Pi_{v}^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{v}^{\vee}\right) \approx \Gamma\left(1-s-n_{1}-1+t\right) \Gamma(1-s+t) \Gamma\left(1-s-n_{2}+1+t\right)
$$

An integer $m$ is critical if

$$
m \geq\left\{2+n_{1}-t ; 1-t ; n_{2}-t\right\}
$$

and

$$
m \leq\left\{t-n_{1}-1 ; t ; t+1-n_{2}\right\} .
$$

Hence it is easy to see that:

Critical set for $L(s, \Pi \times \chi)=\left\{m \in \mathbb{Z} \mid 2+n_{1}-t \leq m \leq t-n_{1}-1\right\}$.
Clearly it is non-empty only if $n_{1} \leq t-2$.
On summarizing Case 1 we get: If $t$ is strictly positive,
critical set for $L(s, \Pi \times \chi)$

$$
=m \in \begin{cases}{\left[2+n_{1}-t, t-n_{1}-1\right]} & \text { if } \quad 0 \leq n_{1} \leq t-2  \tag{4.17}\\ {\left[t-n_{1}, n_{1}+1-t\right]} & \text { if } t \leq n_{1} \leq 2 t-1 \\ {[1-t, t]} & \text { if } \quad n_{1} \geq 2 t\end{cases}
$$

Note that for $n_{1}=t-1$ there are no critical points.

Case 2: $t<0$ for all $v \in S_{c}$.
This implies $n_{1}+1-t \geq 0$ as $n_{1}$ is non-negative.
Case 2a. $n_{2}-1-t \leq 0$ for all $v$. The associated $L$-factors at infinity are:

$$
L_{\infty}\left(s, \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \chi_{\infty}\right) \approx \prod_{v \in S_{c}} \Gamma\left(s+n_{1}+1-t\right) \Gamma(s-t) \Gamma\left(s-n_{2}+1+t\right)
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& L_{\infty}\left(1-s, \Pi_{\infty}^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{\infty}^{\vee}\right) \\
& \quad \approx \prod_{v \in S_{c}} \Gamma\left(1-s+n_{1}+1-t\right) \Gamma(1-s-t) \Gamma\left(1-s-n_{2}+1+t\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

An integer $m \in \mathbb{Z}$ is critical if for all $v \in S_{c}$ the following inequalities hold:

$$
m+n_{1}+1-t \geq 1, \quad m-t \geq 1, \quad m-n_{2}+1+t \geq 1
$$

and

$$
1-m+n_{1}+1-t \geq 1, \quad 1-m-t \geq 1, \quad 1-m-n_{2}+1+t \geq 1 .
$$

To simplify above inequalities we get:

$$
m \geq 1+t ; m \geq n_{2}-t, \text { and } m \leq-t ; m \leq 1+t-n_{2} .
$$

Similar to case 1 consider the following two cases

- If $2 t+1 \leq n_{2}$ for all $v \in S_{c}$. Then it is easy to conclude that:

Critical set for $L(s, \Pi \times \chi)=\left\{m \in \mathbb{Z} \mid n_{2}-t \leq m \leq 1+t-n_{2}\right\}$, which is non-empty if and only if $n_{2} \leq t$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$.

- If $n_{2} \leq 2 t$ for all $v$. Again it is an easy exercise now to see that:

$$
\text { Critical set for } L(s, \Pi \times \chi)=\{m \in \mathbb{Z} \mid 1+t \leq m \leq-t\} \text {. }
$$

In this case critical set is always non-empty as $t>0$.
Case 2b. $n_{2}-1-t \geq 0$ for all $v \in S_{c}$.
Recall $n_{1}+1-t \geq 0$. The associated local $L$-factors are:

$$
L\left(s, \Pi_{v} \otimes \chi_{v}\right) \approx \Gamma\left(s+n_{1}+1-t\right) \Gamma(s-t) \Gamma\left(s+n_{2}-1-t\right)
$$

and

$$
L\left(1-s, \Pi_{v}^{\vee} \otimes \chi_{v}^{\vee}\right) \approx \Gamma\left(1-s+n_{1}+1-t\right) \Gamma(1-s-t) \Gamma\left(1-s+n_{2}-1-t\right)
$$

An integer $m \in \mathbb{Z}$ is critical if for all $v \in S_{c}$ the following inequalities hold :

$$
m \geq\left\{-n_{1}-1+t ; 1+t ; 2+t-n_{2}\right\}
$$

and

$$
m \leq\left\{n_{1}+1-t ;-1-t ; n_{2}-1-t\right\} .
$$

It is an easy exercise now to see that:
Critical set for $L(s, \Pi \times \chi)=\left\{m \in \mathbb{Z} \mid 2+t-n_{2} \leq m \leq n_{2}-1-t\right\}$.
Observe that critical set is non-empty only if $t+2 \leq n_{2}$.
On summarizing Case 2 we get: If $t$ is strictly negative,
critical set for $L(s, \Pi \times \chi)$

$$
=m \in \begin{cases}{\left[2-n_{2}+t, n_{2}-1-t\right]} & \text { if } t+2 \leq n_{2} \leq 0,  \tag{4.18}\\ {\left[n_{2}-t, 1+t-n_{2}\right]} & \text { if } 2 t+1 \leq n_{2} \leq t, \\ {[1+t,-t]} & \text { if } n_{2} \leq 2 t\end{cases}
$$

Note that for $n_{2}=t+1$ critical set is empty.

Case 3: $t=0$.
Then in the expression for $L_{\infty}\left(s, \Pi_{\infty} \times \chi_{\infty}\right)$ and $L_{\infty}\left(1-s, \Pi_{\infty}^{\vee} \times \chi_{\infty}^{\vee}\right)$ we would have a factor: $\Gamma(s)$ and $\Gamma(1-s)$ respectively and it is easy to see that in this situation there are no critical points; whence, we will not consider this case.

### 4.3 Interlacing of weights

Before stating our next proposition, let's recall the following well-known branching rule (a condition on the coefficients system) for finite-dimensional representations:

$$
\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{GL}_{2}(\mathbb{C})}\left(\mathcal{M}_{\lambda} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}, \mathbb{C}\right) \neq 0 \Longleftrightarrow \mu \succ \lambda^{\vee}
$$

where $\mu \succ \lambda^{\vee}$ means $\mu_{v} \succ \lambda_{v}^{\vee}$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$ and

$$
\mu_{v} \succ \lambda_{v}^{\vee} \equiv \begin{cases}\mu_{1 v} \geq-\lambda_{2 v} \geq \mu_{2 v} \geq-\lambda_{1 v} \geq \mu_{3 v} & \text { if } F \text { is totally real } \\ \mu_{1} \geq-\lambda_{2} \geq \mu_{2} \geq-\lambda_{1} \geq \mu_{3} ; & \\ \mu_{1}^{*} \geq-\lambda_{2}^{*} \geq \mu_{2}^{*} \geq-\lambda_{1}^{*} \geq \mu_{3}^{*} & \text { if } F \text { is a CM field. }\end{cases}
$$

Proposition 4.19 ( $\mathbf{F}$ is totally real) Let $\mu$ and $\Pi$ be as in Remark 4.2.2, and let $\chi$ be a finite order character of $\mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times} / F^{\times}$. We fix once and for all, a totally odd quadratic Hecke character $\xi$ of $F$, and make the following choices for Hecke characters $\chi_{i}=\| \|^{d_{i}} \chi_{i}^{0}$, with integers $d_{i}$ and finite order characters $\chi_{i}^{0}$ :

Case 1. $\varepsilon_{\chi_{v}}=\mathbb{1}$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$.
Case 1a. $m \in\left\{2,4, \ldots, n_{\text {ev }}\right\}, d_{1}=m-1, d_{2}=-1, \chi_{1}^{0}=\chi$, and $\chi_{2}^{0}=\mathbb{1}$; put $\lambda_{v}=(1,1-m)$.

Case 1b. $m \in\left\{1-n_{\mathrm{ev}}, \ldots,-3,-1\right\}, d_{1}=1, d_{2}=m, \chi_{1}^{0}=\mathbb{1}$, and $\chi_{2}^{0}=\chi$; put $\lambda_{v}=(-m,-1)$.

Case 2. $\varepsilon_{\chi_{v}}=\operatorname{sgn}$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$.
Case 2a. $m \in\left\{1,3, \ldots, n_{\text {od }}\right\}, d_{1}=m-1, d_{2}=0, \chi_{1}^{0}=\chi$, and $\chi_{2}^{0}=\xi ;$ put $\lambda_{v}=(0,1-m)$.

Case 2b. $m \in\left\{1-n_{\mathrm{od}}, \ldots,-2,0\right\}, d_{1}=0, d_{2}=m, \chi_{1}^{0}=\xi$, and $\chi_{2}^{0}=\chi$; put $\lambda_{v}=(-m, 0)$.

Then, in all the above four cases, we have

1. $L\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \otimes \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)$ is critical;
2. $H^{1}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}, \mathrm{SO}(2) \mathbb{R}_{+}^{\times} ; \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{v} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}\right)=\mathbb{C} \mathbb{1}$ as an $\mathrm{O}(2) / \mathrm{SO}(2)$-module; 3. $\mu \succ \lambda^{\vee}$.

Proof. The proof is a routine check in each case and we will only briefly present the key details:

Case 1a. For the $L$-value we see that

$$
\begin{aligned}
L\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \otimes \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right) & =L\left(1+d_{1}, \Pi \otimes \chi_{1}^{0}\right) L\left(d_{2}, \Pi \otimes \chi_{2}^{0}\right) \\
& =L(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) L(-1, \Pi)
\end{aligned}
$$

and both the $L$-values on the right hand side are critical by Equation (4.15). The induced representation may be written as

$$
\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{v}=\xi_{m-1}(\operatorname{sgn})(1 / 2) \times \xi_{-1}(\operatorname{sgn})(-1 / 2)
$$

which has nontrivial cohomology with respect to $\lambda_{v}=(1,1-m)$; see Proposition 3.18. Clearly $\lambda \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{2}\right)$. Further for interlacing condition $\mu \succ \lambda^{\vee}$ we want:

$$
n \geq m-1 \geq 0 \geq-1 \geq-n
$$

which follows from the given range of critical set.

Case 1b. For the $L$-value we have

$$
L\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \otimes \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)=L(2, \Pi) L(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)
$$

and for the induced representation we have

$$
\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{v}=\xi_{1}(\operatorname{sgn})(1 / 2) \times \xi_{m}(\operatorname{sgn})(-1 / 2),
$$

which has nontrivial cohomology with respect to $\lambda_{v}=(-m,-1)$. One can easily check that $\mu \succ \lambda^{\vee}$ which is $n \geq 1 \geq 0 \geq m \geq-n$.

Case 2a. For the $L$-value we have

$$
L\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \otimes \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)=L(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) L(0, \Pi \otimes \xi)
$$

and for the induced representation we have

$$
\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{v}=\xi_{m-1}(\operatorname{sgn})(1 / 2) \times(\operatorname{sgn})(-1 / 2),
$$

which has nontrivial cohomology with respect to $\lambda_{v}=(0,1-m)$. Clearly $\lambda \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{2}\right)$ and $\mu \succ \lambda^{\vee}$.

Case 2b. For the $L$-value we have

$$
L\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \otimes \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)=L(1, \Pi \otimes \xi) L(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)
$$

and for the induced representation we have

$$
\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{v}=(\operatorname{sgn})(1 / 2) \times \xi_{m}(\operatorname{sgn})(-1 / 2)
$$

Proposition 4.20 ( $\mathbf{F}$ is a CM field) Let $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$ such that $\mu=$ $\left(\mu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{r}}, \mu_{v}=\left(n_{1}, 0, n_{2} ;-n_{2}, 0,-n_{1}\right)$, with $n_{1} \geq 0$ and $n_{2} \leq 0$. Let $\chi$ be a character of $F^{\times} \backslash \mathbb{A}_{F}^{\times}$such that $\chi_{\infty}\left(z_{\infty}\right)=\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}}\left(z_{v} /\left|z_{v}\right|\right)^{-2 t}$ for some $t \in \mathbb{Z}$. We fix once and for all, a unitary algebraic Hecke character $\phi$ of
$F$ with 'parallel' weight such that $\phi_{\infty}(z)=\left(\frac{z}{|z|}\right)^{2}$, and make the following choice for Hecke characters

$$
\chi_{i}=\|\cdot\|^{\sigma_{i}} \chi_{i}^{1}
$$

for some $\sigma_{i} \in \frac{1}{2} \mathbb{Z}$ and characters $\chi_{i}^{1}$ are such that $\chi_{i \infty}^{1}\left(z_{\infty}\right)=\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}}\left(z_{v} /\left|z_{v}\right|\right)^{-f_{i}}$ and $f_{i} \equiv 2 \sigma_{i}(\bmod 2)$ :

Case 1. $t$ is strictly positive, that is, $t>0 ; n_{1} \geq 1$ and $n_{2} \leq-2 t$ $\forall v \in S_{\infty}$. Also an integer $m$ satisfies Equation (4.17). Choose $\chi_{1}^{1}=\phi$, $\sigma_{1}=-1, \chi_{2}^{1}=\chi$, and $\sigma_{2}=m$; put

$$
\lambda_{v}=(t-m, 0 ; 1,1-t-m) .
$$

Case 2. $t$ is strictly negative, i.e., $t<0 ; n_{2} \leq-1$ and $n_{1} \geq-2 t$ $\forall v \in S_{\infty}$. Furthermore, an integer $m$ satisfies Equation (4.18). Choose $\chi_{1}^{1}=\chi, \sigma_{1}=m-1, \chi_{2}^{1}=\phi^{-1}$, and $\sigma_{2}=1 ;$ put

$$
\lambda_{v}=(0, t-m+1 ;-t-m,-1) .
$$

Then, in all the cases, we have

1. $L\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \otimes \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)$ is critical;
2. $H^{1}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}, \mathrm{U}(2) \mathbb{C}^{\times} ; \Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}\right)=\mathbb{C} \mathbb{1}$ as an $\mathrm{U}(2) / \mathrm{SU}(2)$-module;
3. $\mu \succ \lambda^{v}$.

Proof. The details of the proof in each case are as follows:
Case 1 Clearly $\chi_{1}^{1}=\phi$ implies $f_{1}=-2$ and $\chi_{2}^{1}=\chi$ implies $f_{2}=2 t$.
Then for the $L$-value we see that

$$
\begin{aligned}
L\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \otimes \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right) & =L\left(1, \Pi \otimes \chi_{1}\right) L\left(0, \Pi \otimes \chi_{2}\right) \\
& =L\left(1+\sigma_{1}, \Pi \otimes \chi_{1}^{1}\right) L\left(\sigma_{2}, \Pi \otimes \chi_{2}^{1}\right) \\
& =L(0, \Pi \otimes \phi) L(m, \Pi \otimes \chi),
\end{aligned}
$$

and both the $L$-values on the right hand side are critical by Equation (4.17). Observe that $\Pi \otimes \phi$ is unitary and hence using [20], $L(0, \Pi \otimes \phi) \neq$ 0 . The induced representation may be written as

$$
\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{v}={ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B_{2}(\mathbb{C})}^{\mathrm{GL}_{2}(\mathbb{C})}\left(\xi_{(1,-1)} \otimes \xi_{(-t+m-1, t+m-1)}\right)
$$

which has nontrivial cohomology with respect to

$$
\lambda_{v}=(t-m, 0 ; 1,1-t-m)
$$

see Proposition 3.18. Clearly for the sub-cases in critical set $\lambda \in$ $X^{+}\left(T_{2}\right)$. For the interlacing of weights we want

$$
n_{1} \geq 0 \geq 0 \geq m-t \geq n_{2}
$$

and

$$
n_{2} \leq 1-t-m \leq 0 \leq 1 \leq n_{1}
$$

which immediately follows from the condition on $n_{1}$ and $n_{2}$ in terms of $t$.

Case 2. Clearly from the above substitutions $\chi_{1}^{1}=\chi$ and $\chi_{2}^{1}=\phi^{-1}$ we have $f_{1}=2 t$ and $f_{2}=2$. For the $L$-value we see that

$$
\begin{aligned}
L\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \otimes \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right) & =L\left(1+\sigma_{1}, \Pi \otimes \chi_{1}^{1}\right) L\left(\sigma_{2}, \Pi \otimes \chi_{2}^{1}\right) \\
& =L(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) L\left(1, \Pi \otimes \phi^{-1}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and both the $L$-values on the right hand side are critical by Equation (4.18). Clearly $\Pi \otimes \phi^{-1}$ is unitary and hence $L\left(1, \Pi \otimes \phi^{-1}\right) \neq 0$ by [20]. The induced representation may be written as

$$
\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{v}={ }^{\mathrm{a}} \operatorname{Ind}_{B_{2}}^{\mathrm{GL}_{2}}\left(\xi_{(-t+m, t+m)} \otimes \xi_{(-1,1)}\right)
$$

which has nontrivial cohomology with respect to

$$
\lambda_{v}=(0, t-m+1 ;-t-m,-1) \text {; }
$$

again see Proposition 3.18. In this case also it is easy to check that $\lambda \in X^{+}\left(T_{2}\right)$. For the interlacing of weights we want

$$
n_{1} \geq m-t-1 \geq 0 \geq 0 \geq n_{2}
$$

and

$$
n_{2} \leq-1 \leq 0 \leq-(t+m) \leq n_{1}
$$

From the given conditions on $n_{1}$ and $n_{2}$ in terms of $t$ it is easy to check that all the inequalities are satisfied.

## Chapter 5

## Cohomological interpretation of the integral

In this chapter, we interpret the period integral $I\left(s, \phi_{\Pi}, E\left(\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}\right)\right)$ in terms of Poincaré duality. More precisely, the vector $w_{\Pi_{f}}$ will correspond to a cohomology class $\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}$ in degree $b_{3}^{F}$ (the bottom degree of the cuspidal range for $G_{3}$ ) on a locally symmetric space denoted by $S_{3}\left(K_{f}\right)$ for $\mathrm{GL}_{3}$, and similarly $\varphi_{f} \in \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{f}$ will correspond to a class $\vartheta_{\Sigma}$ in degree $b_{2}^{F}$. The class $\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}$, after dividing by a certain period, has good rationality properties. Pull back $\vartheta_{\Pi}$ along the proper map $\iota: \tilde{S}_{2} \longrightarrow S_{3}$, and wedge (or cup) with $\vartheta_{\Sigma}$, to give a top degree class on $\tilde{S}_{2}$ with coefficients in a tensor product sheaf. Now if $s=1 / 2$ is critical which is the same as saying the constituent sheaves are compatible (which is the case when the weights interlace: $\mu \succ \lambda^{\vee}$ ), then we get a top-degree class on $\tilde{S}_{2}$ with constant coefficients. Apply Poincaré duality, i.e., fix an orientation on $\tilde{S}_{2}$ and integrate. One realizes then that this is essentially the above period integral. Interpreting the integral, and hence the $L$-value it represents, as a cohomological pairing permits us to study arithmetic properties of such special values, since this pairing is Galois equivariant. We now make all this precise.

### 5.1 The cohomology classes

Recall from Propositions 3.9 and 3.13, given any $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$ and for the signature $\epsilon_{\Pi}$ for $\Pi$, the cohomology group

$$
H^{b_{3}^{F}}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{0} ; \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right)\left(\epsilon_{\Pi}\right) \neq 0,
$$

and is one-dimensional. Fix a basis $\left[\Pi_{\infty}\right]$ of this one-dimensional space, and this gives us the following comparison isomorphism (see [33]):

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{F}_{\Pi_{f}} \equiv \mathcal{F}_{\Pi_{f}, \epsilon_{\Pi},\left[\Pi_{\infty}\right]}: \mathcal{W}\left(\Pi_{f}\right) \longrightarrow H^{b_{3}^{F}}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{0} ; V_{\Pi} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right)\left(\epsilon_{\Pi}\right) . \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The isomorphism $\mathcal{F}_{\Pi_{f}}$ is a $G_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{f}\right)$-equivariant map between irreducible modules, both of which have $\mathbb{Q}(\Pi)$ structures that are unique up to homotheties; we can adjust the map by a scalar-which is the period-so as to preserve rational structures; for more details see [33]. There is a nonzero complex number $p^{\epsilon_{\Pi}}(\Pi)$ attached to the datum $\left(\Pi_{f}, \epsilon_{\Pi},\left[\Pi_{\infty}\right]\right)$ such that the normalized map,

$$
\mathcal{F}_{\Pi_{f}}^{\circ}:=p^{\epsilon_{\Pi}}(\Pi)^{-1} \mathcal{F}_{\Pi_{f}}
$$

is $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$-equivariant, i.e., the following diagram commutes


The complex number $p^{\epsilon_{\Pi}}(\Pi)$ is well-defined up to multiplication by elements of $\mathbb{Q}(\Pi)^{\times}$. The collection $\left\{p^{\epsilon \Pi}\left({ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right): \sigma \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})\right\}$ is well-defined in $(\mathbb{Q}(\Pi) \otimes$ $\mathbb{C})^{\times} / \mathbb{Q}(\Pi)^{\times}$. In terms of the un-normalized maps, we can write the above commutative diagram as

$$
\sigma \circ \mathcal{F}_{\Pi_{f}}=\left(\frac{\sigma\left(p^{\kappa} \Pi(\Pi)\right)}{p^{\Pi \Pi}\left(\sigma_{\Pi} \Pi\right)}\right) \mathcal{F}_{\sigma_{\Pi_{f}}} \circ \sigma .
$$

Now define the cohomology class attached to the global Whittaker vector $w_{\Pi_{f}}$ as,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}:=\mathcal{F}_{\Pi_{f}}\left(w_{\Pi_{f}}\right), \quad \text { and } \quad \vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}=p^{\epsilon_{\Pi}}(\Pi)^{-1} \vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}} . \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $K_{f}$ be an open compact subgroup of $G_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{f}\right)$ which fixes $w_{\Pi_{f}}$ and such that, $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{f}$ has vectors fixed under $R_{f}:=\iota^{*} K_{f}$. Then

$$
\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}} \in H^{b_{3}^{F}}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{\circ} ; V_{\Pi}^{K_{f}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu}\right)\left(\epsilon_{\Pi}\right)
$$

and via certain standard isomorphisms [33, Section 3.3], we may identify the class in $H_{\text {cusp }}^{b_{3}^{F}}\left(S_{3}\left(K_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu}\right)\left(\widetilde{\Pi}_{f}\right)$, where $\widetilde{\Pi}_{f}:=\Pi_{f} \otimes \epsilon_{\Pi}$ is a representation of $G_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{f}\right) \otimes \pi_{0}\left(K_{3, \infty}\right)$. Furthermore, since cuspidal cohomology injects into cohomology with compact support, we get $\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}} \in H_{\mathrm{c}}^{b_{3}^{F}}\left(S_{3}\left(K_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu}\right)$.

On the other hand, recall the map in Equation (3.22):

$$
\mathcal{F}_{\Sigma_{f}}: \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{f}^{R_{f}} \longrightarrow H^{b_{2}^{F}}\left(S_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\lambda}\right),
$$

which is $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$-equivariant, that is, $\sigma \circ \mathcal{F}_{\Sigma}=\mathcal{F}_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} \circ \sigma$ for all $\sigma \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$. Define the class

$$
\begin{equation*}
\vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}:=\mathcal{F}_{\Sigma}\left(\varphi_{f}\right), \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\varphi_{f}$ is defined in Equation (4.11). Using the canonical map $\phi^{*}$ (the map induced by $\phi$ in cohomology)

$$
H^{b_{2}^{F}}\left(S_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\lambda}\right) \xrightarrow{\phi^{*}} H^{b^{F}}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\lambda}\right),
$$

we get $\phi^{*} \vartheta_{\Sigma}$ in $H^{b_{2}^{F}}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\lambda}\right)$.

For the open compact subgroups $K_{f}$ of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{f}\right)$ and $R_{f}=\iota^{*}\left(K_{f}\right)$ of $\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(\mathbb{A}_{f}\right)$, the map $\iota$, being a proper map, induces a map between the cohomology with compact supports:

$$
\iota^{*}: H_{\mathbf{c}}^{\bullet}\left(S_{3}\left(K_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu}\right) \longrightarrow H_{\mathbf{c}}^{\bullet}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \iota^{*} \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu}\right)
$$

Now consider the following diagram:

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\mathcal{W}\left(\Pi_{f}\right) \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)_{f}^{\longrightarrow} H_{\mathrm{c}}^{b_{3}^{F}}\left(S_{3}\left(K_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu}\right) \times H^{b_{2}^{F}}\left(S_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\lambda}\right) \\
\downarrow_{\iota^{*} \times \phi^{*}} \\
H_{\mathrm{c}}^{b_{3}^{F}}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \iota^{*} \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu}\right) \times H^{b_{2}^{F}}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \phi^{*} \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\lambda}\right) \\
\mid \wedge \\
H_{\mathrm{c}}^{b_{3}^{F}+b_{2}^{F}}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \iota^{*} \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu} \times \phi^{*} \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\lambda}\right) .
\end{array}
$$

## Numerical coincidence:

1. $F$ is totally real: Using Propositions 3.9 and 3.18 , we have $b_{3}^{F}=2 d_{F}$ and $b_{2}^{F}=d_{F}$. Then we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
b_{3}^{F}+b_{2}^{F}=2 d_{F} & +d_{F}=3 d_{F}=3 r_{1} \\
& =d_{F} \quad \operatorname{dim}\left(\mathrm{GL}_{2}(\mathbb{R})^{0} / \mathrm{SO}(2)\right)=\operatorname{dim}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

2. $F$ is a CM field: Similarly using Propositions 4.20 and 3.18 in this case we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
b_{3}^{F}+b_{2}^{F}=3 d_{0} & +d_{0}=4 d_{0}=4 r_{2} \\
& =d_{0} \quad \operatorname{dim}\left(\mathrm{GL}_{2}(\mathbb{C}) / \mathrm{U}(2)\right)=\operatorname{dim}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence in both the cases

$$
\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}} \wedge \vartheta_{\Sigma} \in H_{\mathrm{c}}^{\operatorname{dim}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right)\right)}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \iota^{*} \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu} \times \phi^{*} \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\lambda}\right) .
$$

## Compatibility of sheaves

We now assume the hypotheses of Proposition 4.19 for totally real case and of Proposition 4.20 for CM case. The interlacing condition of weights $\mu \succ \lambda^{\vee}$, gives the branching rule for finite-dimensional representations as

$$
\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathrm{GL}_{2}(\mathbb{C})}\left(\iota^{*} \mathcal{M}_{\mu}, \mathcal{M}_{\lambda v}\right) \neq 0
$$

which gives a non-trivial pairing, $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle: \iota^{*} \mathcal{M}_{\mu} \times \mathcal{M}_{\lambda} \longrightarrow \mathbb{C}$ which in turn induces a pairing at the level of sheaves:

$$
\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle: \iota^{*} \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu} \times \phi^{*} \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\lambda} \longrightarrow \mathbb{\mathbb { C }},
$$

where $\mathbb{C}$ is the constant sheaf corresponding to $\mathbb{C}$. Now by composing this map with the $\wedge$-map gives

$$
\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle \circ \wedge: H_{\mathrm{c}}^{\operatorname{dim}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right)\right)}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \iota^{*} \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\mu} \times \phi^{*} \widetilde{\mathcal{M}}_{\lambda}\right) \longrightarrow H_{c}^{\operatorname{dim}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right)\right)}\left(\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right), \underline{\mathbb{C}}\right) .
$$

### 5.2 The global pairing

We now have a top-degree class on an orientable manifold. We fix an orientation, compatibly on all the connected components; this was called the Harder-Mahnkopf cycle in [30, Section 3.2.3] (see also [29, Section 2.5.3.3]), and defined therein as

$$
C\left(R_{f}\right)=\frac{1}{\operatorname{Vol}\left(R_{f}\right)} \sum_{x \in \mathbb{Q}^{\times} \backslash \mathbb{A}^{\times} / \mathbb{R}_{>0} \operatorname{det}\left(R_{f}\right)}\left[\vartheta_{\left.x, R_{f}\right]} .\right.
$$

The action of $\delta_{2}=(-1,1)$ on this cycle $C\left(R_{f}\right)$ is given by $r_{\delta_{2}}^{*} C\left(R_{f}\right)=$ $(-1) C\left(R_{f}\right)$. Here $\delta_{2} \in \mathrm{O}(2) / \mathrm{SO}(2)$ and this action is relevant only in the totally real case; in the CM case since $\mathrm{U}(2)$ is connected, $\pi_{0}\left(K_{2, \infty}\right)$ is trivial. We can define the global pairing as:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}, \vartheta_{\Sigma}\right\rangle_{C\left(R_{f}\right)}=\int_{C\left(R_{f}\right)} \iota^{*} \vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}} \wedge \phi^{*} \vartheta_{\Sigma} . \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

To evaluate this global pairing, we will write the cohomology classes as differential forms, and as in [30, Section 3.2.5], but before we evaluate the global pairing we will need to discuss an analogous pairing involving the ( $\mathfrak{g}_{\infty}, K_{\infty}^{0}$ )classes at infinity.

## The pairing at infinity

(See [29, Section 2.5.3.6].) Recall, that we have fixed $\left[\Pi_{\infty}\right]$ a basis of the onedimensional space $H^{b_{3}^{F}}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty}, K_{3, \infty}^{0} ; \Pi_{\infty} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu, \mathrm{C}}\right)\left(\epsilon_{\Pi}\right)$, and similarly, we have $\left[\Sigma_{\infty}\right]$ generating the one-dimensional space $H^{b_{2}^{F}}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, \infty}, K_{2, \infty}^{0} ; \Sigma_{\infty}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right) \otimes\right.$ $\left.\mathcal{M}_{\lambda, \mathrm{C}}\right)$. Define

$$
d_{n}^{F}=\operatorname{dim}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{n, \infty} / \mathfrak{k}_{n, \infty}\right) .
$$

To compute the pairing at infinity, we choose a basis $\left\{\mathrm{y}_{j}: 1 \leq j \leq d_{2}^{F}\right\}$ of $\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, \infty} / \mathfrak{k}_{2, \infty}\right)^{*}$ such that $\left\{\mathrm{y}_{j}: 1 \leq j \leq d_{2}^{F}-1\right\}$ is a basis of $\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, \infty} / \operatorname{Lie}\left(C_{2, \infty}\right)\right)^{*}$. Next, fix a basis $\left\{\mathrm{x}_{i}: 1 \leq i \leq d_{3}^{F}\right\}$ of $\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty} / \mathfrak{k}_{3, \infty}\right)^{*}$, such that $\iota^{*} \mathrm{x}_{j}=\mathrm{y}_{j}$ for all $1 \leq j \leq d_{2}^{F}-1$, and $\iota^{*} \mathrm{x}_{j}=0$ if $j \geq d_{2}^{F}$. We further note that $\mathrm{y}_{1} \wedge \mathrm{y}_{2} \wedge \cdots \wedge \mathrm{y}_{d_{2}^{F}}$ corresponds to a $G_{2}(\mathbb{R})^{0}$-invariant measure on $\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right)$. Let $\left\{m_{\alpha}\right\}$ (resp., $\left\{m_{\beta}\right\}$ ) be a $\mathbb{Q}$-basis for $\mathcal{M}_{\mu}$ (resp., $\mathcal{M}_{\lambda}$ ).
The class $\left[\Pi_{\infty}\right]$ is represented by a $K_{3, \infty}^{0}$-invariant element in $\wedge^{b_{3}^{F}}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{3, \infty} / \mathfrak{k}_{3, \infty}\right)^{*} \otimes$ $\mathcal{W}\left(\Pi_{\infty}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu, \mathbb{C}}$ which can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[\Pi_{\infty}\right]=\sum_{\mathrm{i}=i_{1}<\cdots<i_{b_{3}^{F}}} \sum_{\alpha} \mathrm{x}_{\mathrm{i}} \otimes w_{\infty, \mathrm{i}, \alpha} \otimes m_{\alpha}, \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $w_{\infty, \mathrm{i}, \alpha} \in \mathcal{W}\left(\Pi_{\infty}, \psi_{\infty}\right)$. Similarly, $\left[\Sigma_{\infty}\right]$ is represented by a $K_{2, \infty}^{0}$-invariant element in

$$
\wedge_{2}^{b_{2}^{F}}\left(\mathfrak{g}_{2, \infty} / \mathfrak{k}_{2, \infty}\right)^{*} \otimes \Sigma_{\infty}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right) \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda}
$$

which we write as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[\Sigma_{\infty}\right]=\sum_{\mathrm{j}=j_{1}<\cdots<j_{b_{2}^{F}}} \sum_{\beta} \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{j}} \otimes \varphi_{\infty, \mathrm{j}, \beta} \otimes m_{\beta} . \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $w_{\infty, \mathrm{j}, \beta} \in \mathcal{W}\left(\Sigma_{\infty}\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right), \psi_{\infty}^{-1}\right)$ be the Whittaker vector corresponding to $\varphi_{\infty, \mathrm{j}, \beta}$. We now define a pairing at infinity by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\left[\Pi_{\infty}\right],\left[\Sigma_{\infty}\right]\right\rangle=\sum_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{j}} s(\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{j}) \sum_{\alpha, \beta}\left\langle m_{\alpha}, m_{\beta}\right\rangle \Psi_{\infty}\left(1 / 2, w_{\infty, \mathrm{i}, \alpha}, w_{\infty, \mathrm{j}, \beta}\right), \tag{5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $s(\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{j}) \in\{0,-1,1\}$ is defined by $\iota^{*} \mathrm{x}_{\mathrm{i}} \wedge \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{j}}=s(\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{j}) \mathrm{y}_{1} \wedge \mathrm{y}_{2} \wedge \cdots \wedge \mathrm{y}_{d_{2}^{F}}$. Recall that the zeta integral at infinity $\Psi_{\infty}\left(1 / 2, w_{\infty, \mathrm{i}, \alpha}, w_{\infty, \mathrm{j}, \beta}\right)$ is defined only
after meromorphic continuation. However, the assumption that $s=1 / 2$ is critical ensures that they are all finite, hence $\left\langle\left[\Pi_{\infty}\right],\left[\Sigma_{\infty}\right]\right\rangle$ is finite.

Lemma $5.8\left\langle\left[\Pi_{\infty}\right],\left[\Sigma_{\infty}\right]\right\rangle \neq 0$.
Proof. It is easy to see that

$$
\left\langle\left[\Pi_{\infty}\right],\left[\Sigma_{\infty}\right]\right\rangle=\prod_{v \in S_{\infty}}\left\langle\left[\Pi_{v}\right],\left[\Sigma_{v}\right]\right\rangle ;
$$

hence it is enough to prove non-vanishing locally for every $v \in S_{\infty}$. We will consider the totally real and CM cases separately:

- If $F$ is a totally real field: As in Section 3.4.2, for the discrete series representation, it is well known that

$$
H^{1}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}, \mathrm{SO}(2) \mathbb{R}_{+}^{\times} ; D_{\lambda^{\vee}} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda}\right) \cong \mathbb{C}\left[D_{\lambda}\right]^{+} \oplus \mathbb{C}\left[D_{\lambda}\right]^{-}
$$

Recall from Equation (3.19) that $\left[D_{\lambda}\right]^{+}$maps to $\left[\Sigma_{v}\right]$ under the map denoted $i^{\bullet}$ therein, and this map also kills $\left[D_{\lambda}\right]^{-}$. One can conclude that

$$
\left\langle\left[\Pi_{v}\right],\left[\Sigma_{v}\right]\right\rangle=\left\langle\left[\Pi_{v}\right],\left[D_{\lambda}\right]^{+}\right\rangle .
$$

Now Kasten and Schmidt [22] have proved $\left\langle\left[\Pi_{v}\right],\left[D_{\lambda}\right]^{+}\right\rangle \neq 0$, which proves the lemma.

- If $F$ is CM field: Using Binyong Sun [41, Theorem C], after converting to our notations, we have

$$
H^{3 d_{0}}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}(\mathbb{C}), \mathrm{U}(2) \mathbb{C}^{\times} ; \Pi_{v} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\mu_{v}}^{\vee} \otimes \sigma_{v} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu_{v}}^{\vee}\right) \neq 0 .
$$

In other words

$$
\left\langle\left[\Pi_{v}\right],\left[\sigma_{v}\right]\right\rangle \neq 0,
$$

where $\left[\sigma_{v}\right]=H^{d_{0}}\left(\mathfrak{g l}_{2}(\mathbb{C}), \mathrm{U}(2) \mathbb{C}^{\times} ; \sigma_{v} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu_{v}}^{\vee}\right)$ is a generator of onedimensional cohomology group. Here $\sigma_{v} \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \nu\right)$ with $\nu=\left(\nu_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{\infty}}$ such that if

$$
\nu_{v}=\left(\nu_{1}, \nu_{2} ; \nu_{1}^{*}, \nu_{2}^{*}\right)
$$

then

$$
\sigma_{v}=\operatorname{Ind}_{B_{2}(\mathbb{C})}^{\mathrm{GL}(\mathbb{C})}\left(z^{a_{1}} \bar{z}^{b_{1}} \otimes z^{a_{2}} \bar{z}^{b_{2}}\right)
$$

where $\left(a_{1}, a_{2}\right)=\left(\nu_{1}+\frac{1}{2}, \nu_{2}-\frac{1}{2}\right)$ and $\left(b_{1}, b_{2}\right)=\left(\nu_{2}^{*}-\frac{1}{2}, \nu_{1}^{*}+\frac{1}{2}\right)$. On comparing $\sigma_{v}$ with our $G_{2}\left(F_{v}\right)$-representation $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)$ (see Section 3.4 for the definition of $\left.\Sigma\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)\right)$ we get

$$
\frac{2 \sigma_{1}-f_{1}+1}{2}=\nu_{1}+\frac{1}{2} ; \quad \frac{2 \sigma_{1}+f_{1}+1}{2}=\nu_{2}^{*}-\frac{1}{2}
$$

and

$$
\frac{2 \sigma_{2}-f_{2}-1}{2}=\nu_{2}-\frac{1}{2} ; \quad \frac{2 \sigma_{2}+f_{2}-1}{2}=\nu_{1}^{*}+\frac{1}{2} .
$$

Simplifying these equations we get:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\nu_{v} & =\left(\nu_{1}, \nu_{2} ; \nu_{1}^{*}, \nu_{2}^{*}\right) \\
& =\left(\frac{2 \sigma_{1}-f_{1}}{2}, \frac{2 \sigma_{2}-f_{2}}{2} ; \frac{2 \sigma_{1}+f_{1}}{2}+1, \frac{2 \sigma_{2}+f_{2}}{2}-1\right) \\
& =\left(-\lambda_{2},-\lambda_{1} ;-\lambda_{2}^{*},-\lambda_{1}^{*}\right) \\
& =\lambda_{v}^{\vee}
\end{aligned}
$$

This implies $\sigma_{v} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu_{v}}^{\vee}=\sigma_{v} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\nu_{v}^{\vee}}=\Sigma_{v} \otimes \mathcal{M}_{\lambda_{v}}$. Hence we get

$$
\left\langle\left[\Pi_{v}\right],\left[\Sigma_{v}\right]\right\rangle=\left\langle\left[\Pi_{v}\right],\left[\sigma_{v}\right]\right\rangle \neq 0,
$$

which proves the lemma.

In both cases we are now justified in making the definition:

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{\infty}(\mu, \lambda):=\frac{1}{\left\langle\left[\Pi_{\infty}\right],\left[\Sigma_{\infty}\right]\right\rangle} \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

## 5.3 $L$-value as a global pairing of cohomology classes

Using Equations (5.1) and (5.5) we write:

$$
\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}=\sum_{\mathrm{i}} \sum_{\alpha} \mathrm{x}_{\mathrm{i}} \otimes \phi_{\mathrm{i}, \alpha} \otimes m_{\alpha},
$$

where the cusp form $\phi_{\mathrm{i}, \alpha}$ in the $\psi$-Whittaker model of $\Pi$, looks like $w_{\Pi_{f}} \otimes$ $w_{\infty, \mathrm{i}, \alpha}$; recall from Equation (4.12) that $w_{\Pi_{f}}$ corresponds to $\phi_{f}$. Similarly, using Equations (3.22) and (5.6), we may write

$$
\vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}=\sum_{\mathrm{j}} \sum_{\beta} \mathrm{y}_{\mathrm{j}} \otimes E_{\mathrm{j}, \beta} \otimes m_{\beta},
$$

where the Eisenstein series $E_{\mathrm{j}, \beta}$ is constructed by taking Eisenstein summation for the function $\varphi_{f} \otimes \varphi_{\infty, \mathrm{j}, \beta}$ in the full induced representation $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$, with $\varphi_{f}$ as is in Equation (4.11). We get the global pairing

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}, \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle_{C\left(R_{f}\right)} & =\sum_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{j}} \sum_{\alpha, \beta} s(\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{j})\left\langle m_{\alpha}, m_{\beta}\right\rangle \int_{\tilde{S}_{2}\left(R_{f}\right)} \phi_{\mathrm{i}, \alpha}(\iota(g)) E_{\mathrm{j}, \beta}(g) d g \\
& =\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) \sum_{\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{j}} \sum_{\alpha, \beta} s(\mathrm{i}, \mathrm{j})\left\langle m_{\alpha}, m_{\beta}\right\rangle I\left(\frac{1}{2}, \phi_{\mathrm{i}, \alpha}, E_{\mathrm{j}, \beta}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

The second equality is because of $\phi_{f}$ and $\varphi_{f}$ are both $R_{f}$ invariant, and also by our normalization of measure in Section 2.1 that $\operatorname{vol}(\mathrm{SO}(n))=1$ and $\operatorname{vol}(\mathrm{U}(n))=1$. Using Equation (4.13) we get:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}, \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle_{C\left(R_{f}\right)}=\frac{1}{P_{\infty}(\mu, \lambda)} \cdot \frac{\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) A_{\Sigma} \cdot V_{\Sigma} \cdot L_{\Sigma}}{L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)} \cdot \frac{L_{f}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)}{L_{f}\left(2, \chi_{1} \chi_{2}^{-1}\right)} . \tag{5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Dividing by the period $p^{\epsilon_{\Pi}}(\Pi)$ to get the rational class $\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}$ now proves the following:

Theorem 5.11 Let $\Pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \mu\right)$ with $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3}\right)$, and $\Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$ be the induced representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(\mathbb{A}_{\mathbb{F}}\right)$ as in Section 3.4. Separate the cases as follows:
$\mathbf{F}$ is totally real. Let $\lambda \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{2}\right)$ be the dominant integral 'parallel' weight determined by $d_{1}, d_{2}, \chi_{1}^{\circ}, \chi_{2}^{\circ}$ as: $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{r}}$, where each $\lambda_{v}=\left(-d_{2},-d_{1}\right)$ such that $e_{i v} \not \equiv d_{i}(\bmod 2)$, and
$\mathbf{F}$ is a $\mathbf{C M}$ field. Let $\lambda \in X^{+}\left(T_{2}\right)$ be the dominant integral 'parallel' weight determined by $\sigma_{1}, \sigma_{2}, \chi_{1}^{1}, \chi_{2}^{1}$ as: $\lambda=\left(\lambda_{v}\right)_{v \in S_{c}}$, where each $\lambda_{v}=\left(\lambda_{v}^{\iota}, \lambda_{v}^{\bar{\imath}}\right)$; with $\lambda_{v}^{\iota}=\left(\frac{f_{2}}{2}-\sigma_{2}, \frac{f_{1}}{2}-\sigma_{1}\right)$, and $\lambda_{v}^{\bar{l}}=\left(-\left(\frac{f_{1}}{2}+\sigma_{1}+1\right), 1-\frac{f_{2}}{2}-\sigma_{2}\right)$.

Assume that $s=1 / 2$ is critical for $L\left(s, \Pi \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)$ and that $\mu \succ \lambda^{\vee}$. Then there exist nonzero complex numbers $P_{\infty}(\mu, \lambda)$ and $p^{\epsilon_{\Pi}}(\Pi)$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{L_{f}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)}{P_{\infty}(\mu, \lambda) p^{\epsilon_{\Pi}}(\Pi) L_{f}\left(2, \chi_{1} \chi_{2}^{-1}\right)} \\
& \quad=\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot A_{\Sigma} \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle_{C\left(R_{f}\right)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

This already shows that the left hand side is algebraic. Moreover we can study the action of the Galois group of $\mathbb{Q}$ on the quantities.

### 5.4 The main identity for the critical values $L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)$

## $F$ is totally real

Now recall the fact that the $L$-value at $s=1 / 2$ attached to the pair of representations ( $\Pi, \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)$ ) decomposes as

$$
\begin{aligned}
L_{f}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right) & =L_{f}\left(1, \Pi \otimes \chi_{1}\right) L_{f}\left(0, \Pi \otimes \chi_{2}\right) \\
& =L_{f}\left(1+d_{1}, \Pi \otimes \chi_{1}^{0}\right) L_{f}\left(d_{2}, \Pi \otimes \chi_{2}^{0}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now we consider the four cases as delineated in Proposition 4.19. Before getting into details, let's comment that, using Equation (3.5), in each case the $L$-value $L\left(2, \chi_{1} \chi_{2}^{-1}\right)$ in the denominator of the left hand side of the above theorem, which is the same as $L\left(2+d_{1}-d_{2}, \chi_{1}^{0} \chi_{2}^{0-1}\right)$, is in fact a critical value of a classical Dirichlet $L$-function of a finite order Hecke character of $F$ for the choices of $d_{j}$ and $\chi_{j}^{0}, j=1,2$.

Case 1. $\chi$ is even, that is, $\varepsilon_{\chi_{v}}=\mathbb{1}$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$.

Case 1a. $m \in\left\{2,4, \ldots, n_{\text {ev }}\right\}$. Take $d_{1}=m-1, d_{2}=-1, \chi_{1}^{0}=\chi$, and $\chi_{2}^{0}=\mathbb{1}$. Put $\lambda_{v}=(1,1-m)$. Then, Theorem 5.11 takes the form:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{+}(\Pi) L_{f}(2+m, \chi)} \\
& =\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot A_{\Sigma} \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle_{C\left(R_{f}\right)}, \tag{5.12}
\end{align*}
$$

where the modified period is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{r}^{+}(\Pi):=p^{\epsilon \Pi}(\Pi) L_{f}(-1, \Pi)^{-1} . \tag{5.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Case 1b. $m \in\left\{1-n_{\mathrm{ev}}, \ldots,-3,-1\right\}$. Take $d_{1}=1, d_{2}=m, \chi_{1}^{0}=\mathbb{1}$, and $\chi_{2}^{0}=\chi$. Put $\lambda_{v}=(-m,-1)$. In this case Theorem 5.11 takes the form:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}(\mu, m) \Omega_{l}^{+}(\Pi) L_{f}\left(3-m, \chi^{-1}\right)} \\
& =\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot A_{\Sigma} \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle_{C\left(R_{f}\right)}, \tag{5.14}
\end{align*}
$$

where the modified period is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{l}^{+}(\Pi):=p^{\epsilon \Pi}(\Pi) L_{f}(2, \Pi)^{-1} . \tag{5.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Case 2. $\chi$ is odd, that is, $\varepsilon_{\chi_{v}}=\operatorname{sgn}$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$. In this case, we fix once and for all, a totally odd quadratic Hecke character $\xi$ of $F$.

Case 2a. $m \in\left\{1,3, \ldots, n_{\text {od }}\right\}$. Take $d_{1}=m-1, d_{2}=0, \chi_{1}^{0}=\chi$, and $\chi_{2}^{0}=\xi$. Put $\lambda_{v}=(0,1-m)$. Then Theorem 5.11 takes the form:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{-}(\Pi) L_{f}\left(m+1, \chi \xi^{-1}\right)} \\
& =\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot A_{\Sigma} \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle_{C\left(R_{f}\right)} \tag{5.16}
\end{align*}
$$

where the modified period is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{r}^{-}(\Pi):=p^{\epsilon_{\Pi}}(\Pi) L_{f}(0, \Pi \otimes \xi)^{-1} . \tag{5.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Case 2b. $m \in\left\{1-n_{\text {od }}, \ldots,-2,0\right\}$. Take $d_{1}=0, d_{2}=m, \chi_{1}^{0}=\xi$, and $\chi_{2}^{0}=\chi$. Put $\lambda_{v}=(-m, 0)$. Then, Theorem 5.11 takes the form:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}(\mu, m) \Omega_{l}^{-}(\Pi) L_{f}\left(2-m, \xi \chi^{-1}\right)} \\
& =\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot A_{\Sigma} \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle_{C\left(R_{f}\right)} \tag{5.18}
\end{align*}
$$

where the modified period is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{l}^{-}(\Pi):=p^{\epsilon_{\Pi}}(\Pi) L_{f}(1, \Pi \otimes \xi)^{-1} . \tag{5.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

## $F$ is CM field

Before getting into the details observe that, since there are no real places, signature doesn't appear in the period $p^{\epsilon \Pi}(\Pi)$ and $\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}$. Hence we denote it as $p(\Pi)$ and $\vartheta_{\Pi}^{\circ}$ respectively. Furthermore we prove a lemma regarding the criticality of the $L$-value $L\left(2, \chi_{1} \chi_{2}^{-1}\right)$ in the denominator of the left hand side of the above theorem, which is the same as $L\left(2+\sigma_{1}-\sigma_{2}, \chi_{1}^{1}\left(\chi_{2}^{1}\right)^{-1}\right)$.

Lemma $5.20 L\left(2+\sigma_{1}-\sigma_{2}, \chi_{1}^{1}\left(\chi_{2}^{1}\right)^{-1}\right)$ is indeed a critical value of $L$ function attached to the unitary algebraic Hecke character $\chi_{1}^{1}\left(\chi_{2}^{1}\right)^{-1}$ of $F$ for the choices of $\sigma_{j}$ and $\chi_{j}^{1}, j=1,2$.

Proof. Consider the two cases as delineated in Proposition 4.19.
Case 1. Suppose $t$ is totally positive, $n_{2} \leq-2 t$ and $n_{1} \geq 1$. Take $f_{1}=-2, \sigma_{1}=-1, f_{2}=2 t$, and $\sigma_{2}=m$. Then the $L$-value

$$
L\left(2+\sigma_{1}-\sigma_{2}, \chi_{1}^{1}\left(\chi_{2}^{1}\right)^{-1}\right)=L\left(1-m, \chi^{\circ}\right)
$$

with $\chi^{\circ}$ is such that $\chi_{\infty}^{\circ}(z)=\left(\frac{z}{|z|}\right)^{2+2 t}$. Now using Section 3.2, $1-m$ is critical for $\chi^{\circ}$ if

$$
-t \leq 1-m \leq 1+t
$$

that is, $-t \leq m \leq 1+t$. We check this condition for the following three sub-cases:

- For $0 \leq n_{1} \leq t-2, \quad m \in\left[2+n_{1}-t, t-n_{1}-1\right]$. This gives a series of inequaities

$$
-t<2+n_{1}-t \leq m \leq t-n_{1}-1<t<1+t .
$$

- For $t \leq n_{1} \leq 2 t-1, \quad m \in\left[t-n_{1}, n_{1}+1-t\right]$. This implies

$$
-t<-t+1<t-n_{1} \leq m \leq n_{1}+1-t \leq t-1<t+1 .
$$

- For $n_{1} \geq 2 t, \quad m \in[1-t, t]$, which immediately gives $-t \leq m \leq$ $1+t$.

Hence in all the above sub-cases, $1-m$ is critical for $\chi^{\circ}$.

Case 2b. $t$ is totally negative, $n_{1} \geq-2 t$ and $n_{2} \leq-1$. Take $f_{1}=2 t$, $\sigma_{1}=m-1, f_{2}=2$, and $\sigma_{2}=1$. Then the $L$-value

$$
L\left(2+\sigma_{1}-\sigma_{2}, \chi_{1}^{1}\left(\chi_{2}^{1}\right)^{-1}\right)=L\left(m, \chi^{\circ}\right),
$$

with $\chi^{\circ}$ is such that $\chi_{\infty}^{\circ}(z)=\left(\frac{z}{|z|}\right)^{2-2 t}$. Again using Section 3.2, $m$ is critical for $\chi^{\circ}$ if

$$
t \leq m \leq 1-t
$$

Again we need to check this condition for the following three sub-cases:

- For $t+2 \leq n_{2} \leq 0, m \in\left[2-n_{2}+t, n_{2}-1-t\right]$. This gives a series of inequalities

$$
t<2-n_{2}+t \leq m \leq n_{2}-1-t<1-t .
$$

- For $2 t+1 \leq n_{2} \leq t, \quad m \in\left[n_{2}-t, 1+t-n_{2}\right]$. This implies

$$
t<t+1<n_{2}-t \leq m \leq 1+t-n_{2} \leq-t-1<1-t .
$$

- For $n_{2} \leq 2 t, \quad m \in[1+t,-t]$, which gives

$$
t<1+t \leq m \leq-t<1-t
$$

In all the above sub-cases, $m$ is critical for $\chi^{\circ}$.
Hence in each case the $L$-value $L\left(2, \chi_{1} \chi_{2}^{-1}\right)$ is in fact a critical value.
Now recall the fact that the $L$-value at $s=1 / 2$ attached to the pair of representations ( $\left.\Pi, \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right)$ decomposes as

$$
\begin{aligned}
L_{f}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\left(\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right)\right) & =L_{f}\left(1, \Pi \otimes \chi_{1}\right) L_{f}\left(0, \Pi \otimes \chi_{2}\right) \\
& =L_{f}\left(1+\sigma_{1}, \Pi \otimes \chi_{1}^{1}\right) L_{f}\left(\sigma_{2}, \Pi \otimes \chi_{2}^{1}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Case 1. $t$ is strictly positive, $n_{2} \leq-2 t$ and $n_{1} \geq 1$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$. In this case, we fix once and for all, a unitary Hecke character $\phi$ of $F$ such that $\phi_{\infty}(z)=\left(\frac{z}{|z|}\right)^{2}$. An integer $m$ satisfies Equation (4.17). Take $\chi_{1}^{1}=\phi, \sigma_{1}=-1, \chi_{2}^{1}=\chi$ and $\sigma_{2}=m$; put $\lambda_{v}=(t-m, 0 ; 1,1-t-m)$. Then $f_{1}=-2$ and $f_{2}=2 t$. Hence Theorem 5.11 takes the form:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}(\mu, m) \Omega^{+}(\Pi) L_{f}\left(1-m, \phi \chi^{-1}\right)}= \\
& \left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot A_{\Sigma} \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi}^{\circ}, \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle_{C\left(R_{f}\right)}, \tag{5.21}
\end{align*}
$$

where the modified period is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega^{+}(\Pi):=p(\Pi) L_{f}(0, \Pi \otimes \phi)^{-1} . \tag{5.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Case 2. $t$ is negative, $n_{1} \geq-2 t$ and $n_{2} \leq-1$ for all $v \in S_{\infty}$.
Observe that the inverse $\phi^{-1}$ of above defined unitary Hecke character of $F$ satisfies $\phi_{\infty}^{-1}(z)=\left(\frac{z}{|z|}\right)^{-2}$. Also an integer $m$ satisfies Equation (4.18). Take $\chi_{1}^{1}=\chi, \sigma_{1}=m-1, \chi_{2}^{1}=\phi^{-1}$, and $\sigma_{2}=1$; put $\lambda_{v}=(0, t-m+1 ;-t-m,-1)$. Then $f_{1}=2 t$ and $f_{2}=2$. Hence Theorem 5.11 takes the form:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}(\mu, m) \Omega^{-}(\Pi) L_{f}(m, \chi \phi)}= \\
& \quad\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot A_{\Sigma} \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi}^{\circ}, \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle_{C\left(R_{f}\right)}, \tag{5.23}
\end{align*}
$$

where the modified period is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega^{-}(\Pi):=p(\Pi) L_{f}\left(1, \Pi \otimes \phi^{-1}\right)^{-1} . \tag{5.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Chapter 6

## Galois equivariance

### 6.1 The action of $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$

We study Galois equivariance, i.e., behaviour under the action of $\sigma \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ of all the quantities in the main identity for each of the four cases in both the theorems. Let's parse the Galois action on the various ingredients involved in the main identities:

- The Poincaré duality pairing $\langle$,$\rangle is Galois-equivariant. (See, for example,$ [30, Proposition 3.14].)
- The Galois action on the class $\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}$. Due to our specific choice of finite

Whittaker vectors $w_{\Pi_{f}}$, exactly as in [30, Proposition 3.15], we get

$$
\sigma\left(\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}\right)=\frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}\left(\omega_{\Sigma_{f}}\right)\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left(\omega_{\sigma_{f}}\right)} \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Pi, \sigma_{\Pi}}}^{\circ}=\frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1} \chi_{2}\right)\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{1}{ }^{\sigma} \chi_{2}\right)} \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}}^{\circ} .
$$

Furthermore, for Dirichlet characters $\chi_{1}$ and $\chi_{2}$, it's well-known (see [39, Lemma 8]) that

$$
\sigma\left(\frac{\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1} \chi_{2}\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}\right) \mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}\right)}\right)=\frac{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{1}{ }^{\sigma} \chi_{2}\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{1}\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{2}\right)}
$$

Putting the above two together we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma\left(\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}\right)=\frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}\right) \mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}\right)\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{1}\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{2}\right)} \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Pi, \epsilon \sigma_{\Pi}}^{\circ}}^{\circ} . \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

- To understand the Galois action on the class $\vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}$, we begin with the function $\varphi_{f}$ which is the finite part of $\varphi_{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}}$ as defined in Equation (4.11). Let's denote $\varphi_{f}$ also as $\varphi_{\chi_{1 f}, \chi_{2 f}}$. Now, $\sigma \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ acts on $\varphi_{f}$ by acting on all its local components. The action of $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ on $\Sigma_{v}$ is given by acting on the values of a function in the induced space (see [26, Section 1.1]). For the local components of $\varphi_{\chi_{1 f}, \chi_{2 f}}$ (with notations suitably modified) we get for the spherical vectors:

$$
{ }^{\sigma} f_{v}^{\mathrm{sp}}\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)=f_{v}^{\operatorname{sp}}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{1 v},{ }^{\sigma} \chi_{2 v}\right),
$$

and from our choices of new vectors made in Proposition 4.3, we get for $v \in S_{\Sigma} \backslash S_{\chi_{2}}:$

$$
{ }^{\sigma} f_{v}^{\text {new }}\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)=f_{v}^{\text {new }}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{1 v},{ }^{\sigma} \chi_{2 v}\right),
$$

however, for $v \in S_{\chi_{2}}$-the set of ramified primes for $\chi_{2}$, we get:

$$
{ }^{\sigma} f_{v}^{\text {new }}\left(\chi_{1 v}, \chi_{2 v}\right)=\frac{\sigma\left(q_{v}^{n_{2} / 2}\right)}{q_{v}^{n_{2} / 2}} f_{v}^{\mathrm{new}}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{1 v},{ }^{\sigma} \chi_{2 v}\right) .
$$

Note that the quantity $\sigma\left(q_{v}^{n_{2} / 2}\right) / q_{v}^{n_{2} / 2}$ is $\pm 1$. Putting these together we get

$$
{ }^{\sigma} \varphi_{\chi_{1 f}, \chi_{2 f}}=\left(\prod_{v \in S_{\chi_{2}}} \frac{\sigma\left(q_{v}^{n_{2} / 2}\right)}{q_{v}^{n_{2} / 2}}\right) \varphi_{{ }_{\chi_{1 f},}, \chi_{\chi_{2 f}}} .
$$

Since the Eisenstein map $\mathcal{F}_{\Sigma}$ in Equation (3.22) is $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$-equivariant, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma\left(\vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right)=\left(\prod_{v \in S_{\chi_{2}}} \frac{\sigma\left(q_{v}^{n_{2} / 2}\right)}{q_{v}^{n_{2} / 2}}\right) \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}^{\circ} \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

- Now we look at Galois action on the quantity $A_{\Sigma}$. Recall from Equation (4.7) that $A_{\sigma}=\prod_{v \in S_{\Sigma}} A_{v}$ and the values of $A_{v}$ are computed in Proposition
4.6. Now the volume of $\mathcal{O}_{v}$, by our choice of measures, is rational. We easily deduce that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma\left(A_{\Sigma}\right)=\left(\prod_{v \in S_{\chi_{2}}} \frac{\sigma\left(q_{v}^{-n_{2} / 2}\right)}{q_{v}^{-n_{2} / 2}}\right) \cdot \frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}\right)\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{2}\right)} A_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} . \tag{6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

From Equations (6.2) and (6.3) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma\left(A_{\Sigma} \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right)=\frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}\right)\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{( } \chi_{2}\right)} A_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}^{\circ} \tag{6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

- The quantities $L_{\Sigma}$ and $L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)$ are Galois equivariant as they are finite products of local critical $L$-values; this follows from [30, Proposition 3.17].
- The volume terms $\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right)$ and $V_{\Sigma}$ are rational numbers by our choice of measures.
- Using Equation (3.6) we have, for a totally even Dirichlet character $\varrho$ of $F$, and an even positive integer $r$, it's well-known that we have the following rationality result for the critical value $L_{f}(r, \varrho)$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(r, \varrho)}{(2 \pi i)^{r} \mathcal{G}(\varrho)}\right)=\frac{L_{f}\left(r,{ }^{\sigma} \varrho\right)}{(2 \pi i)^{r} \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \varrho\right)} . \tag{6.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

- Finally recall the Fact 3.8, we have an algebraicity result for the critical value $r$ of $L_{f}(r, \chi)$ attached to the finite part of an algebraic Hecke character $\chi$ over a CM field, which can be rewritten as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{L_{f}(r, \chi)}{(2 \pi i)^{r d_{0}} c^{+}(\chi)}\right)=\frac{L_{f}\left(r,{ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)}{(2 \pi i)^{r d_{0}} c^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)} . \tag{6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 6.2 Proof of Theorem 1.2

Notice that for $\sigma \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ applied to the pairing of the cohomology classes, after using Galois-equivariance of the duality pairing, and after using Equations (6.1) and (6.4) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma\left(\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, A_{\Sigma} \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle\right)=\left\langle\vartheta_{\sigma_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}}^{\circ}, A_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}^{\circ}\right\rangle \frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}\right) \mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}\right)^{2}\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{1}\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{2}\right)^{2}} \tag{6.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now keeping above Galois equivariant facts in mind, the details of the proof in all the four cases are as follows:

Case 1a. On multiplying and dividing by the factor $(2 \pi i)^{2+m} \mathcal{G}(\chi)$, rewrite Equation (5.12) as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{1}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{+}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)} \\
& =\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot\left(\frac{L_{f}(2+m, \chi)}{(2 \pi i)^{2+m} \mathcal{G}(\chi)}\right) \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, A_{\Sigma} \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle
\end{aligned}
$$

where $P_{\infty}^{1}(\mu, m)=(2 \pi i)^{2+m} P_{\infty}(\mu, m)$. Now apply $\sigma \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ to both sides. The first three parentheses on the right hand side are $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ equivariant as explained above. In this case we have $\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}^{\circ}\right)=$ $\mathcal{G}(\chi)$ and $\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}^{0}\right)=\mathcal{G}(\mathbb{1})=1$. Hence using Equation (6.7) we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{1}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{+}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)}\right) \\
&=\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2},{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \times{ }^{\sigma} \Sigma\right)\right) \\
& \cdot\left(\frac{L_{f}\left(2+m,{ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)}{(2 \pi i)^{2+m} \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)}\right) \\
& \cdot \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\sigma_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}}^{\circ}, A_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}^{\circ} \frac{\sigma(\mathcal{G}(\chi))}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)},\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

which is the same as

$$
\sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{1}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{+}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)}\right)=\frac{L_{f}\left(m,{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \otimes^{\sigma} \chi\right)}{P_{\infty}^{1}\left({ }^{\sigma} \mu, m\right) \Omega_{r}^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)} \cdot \frac{\sigma(\mathcal{G}(\chi))}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)},
$$

and which in turn may be rewritten as

$$
\sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{1}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{+}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2}}\right)=\frac{L_{f}\left(m,{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \otimes{ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)}{P_{\infty}^{1}\left({ }^{\sigma} \mu, m\right) \Omega_{r}^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)^{2}},
$$

proving the Galois-equivariant version. This implies in particular that

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi)} P_{\infty}^{1}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{+}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2}
$$

where $\approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi)}$ is a number field which is the compositum of the rationality fields $\mathbb{Q}(\Pi)$ and $\mathbb{Q}(\chi)$.

Case 1b Rewrite Equation (5.14) as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{2}(\mu, m) \Omega_{l}^{+}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)} \\
& =\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot\left(\frac{L_{f}(2+m, \chi)}{(2 \pi i)^{3-m} \mathcal{G}(\chi)}\right) \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, A_{\Sigma} \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle,
\end{aligned}
$$

where $P_{\infty}^{2}(\mu, m)=(2 \pi i)^{3-m} P_{\infty}(\mu, m)$. Now apply $\sigma \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ to both sides. As in Case 1a, using the above remarks along with the facts $\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}^{\circ}\right)=\mathcal{G}(\mathbb{1})$ and $\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}^{\circ}\right)=\mathcal{G}(\chi)$, applying $\sigma$ to the pairing we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{2}(\mu, m) \Omega_{l}^{+}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}\left(\chi^{-1}\right)}\right) \\
&=\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2},{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \times{ }^{\sigma} \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot\left(\frac{L_{f}\left(3-m,{ }^{\sigma} \chi^{-1}\right)}{(2 \pi i)^{2+m} \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi^{-1}\right)}\right) \\
& \cdot \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\sigma_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}}^{\circ}, A_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}^{\circ}\right\rangle \frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2}\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)^{2}},
\end{aligned}
$$

which is the same as
$\sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{2}(\mu, m) \Omega_{l}^{+}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}\left(\chi^{-1}\right)}\right)=\frac{L_{f}\left(m,{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \otimes \otimes^{\sigma} \chi^{-1}\right)}{P_{\infty}^{2}\left({ }^{\sigma} \mu, m\right) \Omega_{r}^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi^{-1}\right)} \cdot \frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2}\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)^{2}}$,
and which in turn may be rewritten as

$$
\sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{2}(\mu, m) \Omega_{l}^{+}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)}\right)=\frac{L_{f}\left(m,{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \otimes^{\sigma} \chi\right)}{P_{\infty}^{1}\left({ }^{\sigma} \mu, m\right) \Omega_{l}^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)},
$$

proving the Galois-equivariant version. This implies in particular that

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi)} \quad P_{\infty}^{1}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{+}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)
$$

Case 2a Rewrite Equation (5.16) as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{1}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{-}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi) \mathcal{G}(\xi)^{-1}} \\
& =\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot\left(\frac{L_{f}\left(m+1, \chi \xi^{-1}\right)}{(2 \pi i)^{m+1} \mathcal{G}(\chi) \mathcal{G}(\xi)^{-1}}\right) \\
& \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, A_{\Sigma} \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle,
\end{aligned}
$$

where $P_{\infty}^{3}(\mu, m)=(2 \pi i)^{m+1} P_{\infty}(\mu, m)$. Clearly the first three parentheses on the right hand side are $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$-equivariant as explained earlier. Use Equation (6.7) and substitute the folloing: $\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}^{\circ}\right)=\mathcal{G}(\chi)$ and $\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}^{\circ}\right)=\mathcal{G}(\xi)$. For $\sigma$ applied to the pairing of the cohomology classes we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{3}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{-}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi) \mathcal{G}(\xi)^{-1}}\right) \\
&=\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}\right) \cdot\left(L _ { \sigma _ { \Sigma } } L _ { S _ { \Sigma } } \left(\frac{1}{2},{ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right.\right.\left.\left.\times{ }^{\sigma} \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot\left(\frac{L_{f}\left(m+1,{ }^{\sigma} \chi^{\sigma} \xi^{-1}\right)}{(2 \pi i)^{m+1} \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \xi\right)^{-1}}\right) \\
& \cdot \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\sigma_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}}, A_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}^{\circ}\right\rangle \frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}(\chi) \mathcal{G}(\xi)^{2}\right.}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \xi\right)^{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

which is the same as
$\sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{3}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{-}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)}\right)=\frac{L_{f}\left(m,{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \otimes^{\sigma} \chi\right)}{P_{\infty}^{3}\left({ }^{\sigma} \mu, m\right) \Omega_{r}^{-}\left({ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)} \cdot \frac{\sigma(\mathcal{G}(\chi) \mathcal{G}(\xi)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \xi\right)}$,
and which proves the theorem, since

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi)} \quad P_{\infty}^{3}(\mu, m) \Omega_{r}^{-}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2} \mathcal{G}(\xi)
$$

Case 2b. Rewrite Equation (5.12) as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{4}(\mu, m) \Omega_{l}^{-}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\xi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{-1}} \\
& =\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot\left(\frac{L_{f}\left(2-m, \xi \chi^{-1}\right)}{(2 \pi i)^{2-m} \mathcal{G}(\xi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)-1}\right) \\
& \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, A_{\Sigma} \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle,
\end{aligned}
$$

where $P_{\infty}^{4}(\mu, m)=(2 \pi i)^{2-m} P_{\infty}(\mu, m)$. Now apply $\sigma \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ to both sides. The first three parentheses on the right hand side are $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$-equivariant as explained earlier. Applying $\sigma$ to the pairing of the cohomology classes, and using $\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}^{\circ}\right)=\mathcal{G}(\xi)$ and $\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}^{\circ}\right)=\mathcal{G}(\chi)$ we get

$$
\sigma\left(\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, A_{\Sigma} \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle\right)=\left\langle\vartheta_{\sigma_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ}}^{\circ}, A_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}^{\circ}\right\rangle \frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}(\xi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2}\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \xi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)^{2}} .
$$

Hence

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{4}(\mu, m) \Omega_{l}^{-}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\xi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{-1}}\right) \\
&=\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}\right) \cdot\left(L _ { \sigma _ { \Sigma } } L _ { S _ { \Sigma } } \left(\frac{1}{2},{ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right.\right.\left.\left.\times{ }^{\sigma} \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot\left(\frac{L_{f}\left(2-m,{ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)}{(2 \pi i)^{2-m} \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \xi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)^{-1}}\right) \\
& \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\sigma_{\Pi, \epsilon_{\Pi}}^{\circ},}, A_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}^{\circ}\right\rangle \frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}(\xi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2}\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \xi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)^{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $\xi$ is quadratic, $\mathcal{G}(\xi)^{2}=\mathcal{G}\left(\xi^{2}\right)=\mathcal{G}(\mathbb{1})=1$. We get

$$
\sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{4}(\mu, m) \Omega_{l}^{-}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)}\right)=\frac{L_{f}\left(m,{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \otimes \otimes^{\sigma} \chi\right)}{P_{\infty}^{4}\left({ }^{\sigma} \mu, m\right) \Omega_{l}^{-}\left({ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)},
$$

proving the Galois-equivariant version. This implies in particular that

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi)} \quad P_{\infty}^{4}(\mu, m) \Omega_{l}^{-}(\Pi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)
$$

This concludes the proof of Theorem 1.2.

### 6.3 Proof of Theorem 1.3

The line of proof is exactly same for both the cases. The details are as follows:
Case 1. On multiplying and dividing by $(2 \pi i)^{(1-m) d_{0}} C^{+}\left(\phi \chi^{-1}\right)$, Equation (5.21) may be rewritten as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{+}(\mu, m) \Omega^{+}(\Pi) c^{+}\left(\phi \chi^{-1}\right)} \\
& =\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot\left(\frac{L_{f}\left(1-m, \phi \chi^{-1}\right)}{(2 \pi i)^{(1-m) d_{0}} c^{+}\left(\phi \chi^{-1}\right)}\right) \\
& \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi}^{\circ}, A_{\Sigma} \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle,
\end{aligned}
$$

where $P_{\infty}^{+}(\mu, m)=(2 \pi i)^{(1-m) d_{0}} P_{\infty}(\mu, m)$. Now apply $\sigma \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ to both sides. Using above facts, the first three parentheses on the right hand side of the equation are $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$-equivariant. Applying $\sigma$ to the pairing of the cohomology classes, after using Galois-equivariance of the duality pairing, as well as using Equations (6.1) and (6.4) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma\left(\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi}^{\circ}, A_{\Sigma} \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle\right)=\left\langle\vartheta_{\sigma_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, A_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}^{\circ}\right\rangle \frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}\right) \mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}\right)^{2}\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{1}\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi_{2}\right)^{2}} \tag{6.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

In this case we have $\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}^{1}\right)=\mathcal{G}(\phi)$ and $\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}^{1}\right)=\mathcal{G}(\chi)$. Hence using the above substitutions we get

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{+}(\mu, m) \Omega^{+}(\Pi) c^{+}\left(\phi \chi^{-1}\right)}\right) \\
=\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2},{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \times{ }^{\sigma} \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot\left(\frac{L_{f}\left(1-m,{ }^{\sigma} \phi^{\sigma} \chi^{-1}\right)}{\left.(2 \pi i)^{(1-m) d_{0} c^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \phi^{\sigma} \chi^{-1}\right)}\right)}\right. \\
\cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\sigma_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, A_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} \vartheta_{\left.\sigma_{\Sigma}\right\rangle}^{\circ} \frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}(\phi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2}\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \phi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)^{2}}\right.
\end{array}
$$

which is the same as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{+}(\mu, m) \Omega^{+}(\Pi) c^{+}\left(\phi \chi^{-1}\right)}\right) \\
& \quad=\frac{L_{f}\left(m,{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \otimes \otimes^{\sigma} \chi\right)}{P_{\infty}^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \mu, m\right) \Omega^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right) c^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \phi^{\sigma} \chi \chi^{-1}\right)} \cdot \frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}(\phi) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2}\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \phi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)^{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence the Galois-equivariant version of Theorem 1.3 in Case $\mathbf{1}$ is as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{+}(\mu, m) \Omega^{+}(\Pi) c^{+}\left(\phi \chi^{-1}\right) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2} \mathcal{G}(\phi)}\right) \\
& =\frac{L_{f}\left(m,{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \otimes{ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)}{P_{\infty}^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \mu, m\right) \Omega^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right) c^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \phi^{\sigma} \chi^{-1}\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)^{2} \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \phi\right)}
\end{aligned} .
$$

This implies in particular that

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi, \phi)} P_{\infty}^{+}(\mu, m) \Omega^{+}(\Pi) c^{+}\left(\phi \chi^{-1}\right) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2} \mathcal{G}(\phi),
$$

where $\approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi, \phi)}$ is a number field which is the compositum of the rationality fields $\mathbb{Q}(\Pi), \mathbb{Q}(\chi)$ and $\mathbb{Q}(\phi)$.

Case 2. The proof is similar to Case 1. So let's briefly present the details. In this case multiply and divide by $(2 \pi i)^{(m) d_{0}} c^{+}(\chi \phi)$, Equation (5.23) may be rewritten as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{-}(\mu, m) \Omega^{-}(\Pi) c^{+}(\chi \phi)} \\
& \quad=\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\Sigma}\right) \cdot\left(L_{\Sigma} L_{S_{\Sigma}}\left(\frac{1}{2}, \Pi \times \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \chi \phi)}{(2 \pi i)^{(m) d_{0}} c^{+}(\chi \phi)}\right) \\
& \quad \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\Pi}^{\circ}, A_{\Sigma} \vartheta_{\Sigma}^{\circ}\right\rangle,
\end{aligned}
$$

where $P_{\infty}^{-}(\mu, m)=(2 \pi i)^{(m) d_{0}} P_{\infty}(\mu, m)$.

Now apply $\sigma \in \operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$ to both sides. The first three parentheses on the right hand side are $\operatorname{Aut}(\mathbb{C})$-equivariant as explained above. Further
we have $\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{1}^{1}\right)=\mathcal{G}(\chi)$ and $\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\chi_{2}^{1}\right)=\mathcal{G}\left(\phi^{-1}\right)$. Using these facts along with Equation (6.8) for Case 2 we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{-}(\mu, m) \Omega^{-}(\Pi) c^{+}(\chi \phi)}\right) \\
&=\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(R_{f}\right) V_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}\right) \cdot\left(L _ { \sigma _ { \Sigma } } L _ { S _ { \Sigma } } \left(\frac{1}{2},{ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right.\right.\left.\left.\times{ }^{\sigma} \Sigma\right)\right) \cdot\left(\frac{L_{f}\left(m,{ }^{\sigma} \chi^{\sigma} \phi\right)}{(2 \pi i)^{(m) d_{0}} c^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi^{\sigma} \phi\right)}\right) \\
& \cdot\left\langle\vartheta_{\sigma_{\Pi}}^{\circ}, A A_{\sigma_{\Sigma}} \vartheta_{\sigma_{\Sigma}}^{\circ}\right\rangle \frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}(\chi) \mathcal{G}\left(\phi^{-1}\right)^{2}\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right) \mathcal{G}\left(\sigma^{( } \phi^{-1}\right)^{2}},
\end{aligned}
$$

which is the same as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{-}(\mu, m) \Omega^{-}(\Pi) c^{+}(\chi \phi)}\right) \\
& \quad=\frac{L_{f}\left(m,{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \otimes{ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)}{P_{\infty}^{-}\left({ }^{\sigma} \mu, m\right) \Omega^{-}\left({ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right) c^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi^{\sigma} \phi\right)} \cdot \frac{\sigma\left(\mathcal{G}(\chi) \mathcal{G}(\phi)^{-2}\right)}{\mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \phi\right)^{-2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

which further may be rewritten as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sigma\left(\frac{L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi)}{P_{\infty}^{-}(\mu, m) \Omega^{-}(\Pi) c^{+}(\chi \phi) \mathcal{G}(\chi) \mathcal{G}(\phi)^{-2}}\right) \\
& =\frac{L_{f}\left(m,{ }^{\sigma} \Pi \otimes{ }^{\sigma} \chi\right)}{P_{\infty}^{-}\left({ }^{\sigma} \mu, m\right) \Omega^{-}\left({ }^{\sigma} \Pi\right) c^{+}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi^{\sigma} \phi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \chi\right) \mathcal{G}\left({ }^{\sigma} \phi\right)^{-2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

proving the Galois-equivariant version of Theorem 1.3 in Case 2. This implies in particular that

$$
L_{f}(m, \Pi \otimes \chi) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\Pi, \chi, \phi)} \quad P_{\infty}^{-}(\mu, m) \Omega^{-}(\Pi) c^{+}(\chi \phi) \mathcal{G}(\chi) \mathcal{G}(\phi)^{-2}
$$

This concludes the proof of Theorem 1.3.

### 6.4 Application: Symmetric square $L$-function

The purpose of this section is to put on record that Theorems 1.2 and 1.3 gives as an application, a rationality result for all the critical values of the symmetric square $L$-functions. We will consider real and imaginary case seperately:

## F: totally real

Let $\varphi$ be a primitive holomorphic cuspidal Hilbert modular form over $F$ of weight $\left(k_{1}, \ldots, k_{d}\right)$, where $d=d_{F}$. Suppose that all the $k_{j}$ have the same parity, and that $\varphi$ is not of CM-type. We want to apply Theorem. 1.2 to get a rationality result for all the critical values of the symmetric square $L$-function $L\left(s, \operatorname{Sym}^{2} \varphi, \chi\right)$ attached to $\varphi$, twisted by a finite order Dirichlet character $\chi$.

We will work with the $L$-function $L\left(s, \operatorname{Sym}^{2} \varphi, \chi\right)$ in the automorphic context. Let $\Pi(\varphi)$ be the cuspidal automorphic representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{2}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)$ attached to $\varphi$. By Gelbart-Jacquet [13] we know the existence of an isobaric automorphic representation $\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\Pi(\varphi))$ of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)$, defined as $\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\Pi(\varphi))=$ $\otimes_{v}^{\prime} \operatorname{Sym}^{2}\left(\Pi_{v}(\varphi)\right)$, where $\operatorname{Sym}^{2}\left(\Pi_{v}(\varphi)\right)$ is an irreducible admissible representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(F_{v}\right)$ obtained via the local Langlands symmetric-square transfer of $\Pi_{v}(\varphi)$. If $\varphi$ is not of CM-type, i.e., $\Pi(\varphi)$ is not a dihedral representation then it's well-known that $\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\Pi(\varphi))$ is cuspidal. If $L\left(s, \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\Pi(\varphi)) \otimes \chi\right)$ denotes the standard degree-3 $L$-function of $\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\Pi(\varphi))$ twisted by $\chi$ then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
L\left(s, \operatorname{Sym}^{2} \varphi, \chi\right)=L\left(s-k_{0}+1, \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\Pi(\varphi)) \otimes \chi\right), \tag{6.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $k_{0}=\min \left(k_{j}\right)$. This may be seen as in the verification of $[34$, Theorem 1.4, (1)].

For convenience, let's suppose that all the $k_{j} \geq 2$ are even. Then $\Pi(\varphi)$ is cohomological to the weight $\mu=\left(\mu_{j}\right)$ where $\mu_{j}=\left(\left(k_{j}-2\right) / 2,-\left(k_{j}-2\right) / 2\right)$.

Following [29], we may verify that $\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\Pi(\varphi)) \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3} ; \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu)\right)$ for the weight $\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu)=\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}\left(\mu_{j}\right)\right)$, where $\operatorname{Sym}^{2}\left(\mu_{j}\right)=\left(k_{j}-2,0,2-k_{j}\right)$.

In the notation of Theorem 1.2 , we get $n=\min \left(n_{j}\right)=k_{0}-2$. For the sake of simplicity, let's consider the case when $\chi$ is totally even. Then, the critical set for $L\left(s, \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\Pi(\varphi)) \otimes \chi\right)$ is given by

$$
\left\{3-k_{0}, \ldots,-1 ; 2,4, \ldots, k_{0}-2\right\} .
$$

From Equation (6.9) we get that the critical set for $L\left(s, \operatorname{Sym}^{2} \varphi, \chi\right)$ is the set

$$
\left\{2,4, \ldots, k_{0}-2 ; k_{0}+1, k_{0}+3, \ldots, 2 k_{0}-3\right\} .
$$

This is to be interpreted as an empty set if $k_{0}=2$. If $m$ is critical for $L\left(s, \operatorname{Sym}^{2} \varphi, \chi\right)$, and is on the right of the center of symmetry, i.e., $k_{0}+1 \leq$ $m \leq 2 k_{0}-3$ and $m$ is odd, then Case 1a. of Theorem 1.2 takes the form:

$$
\begin{equation*}
L\left(m, \operatorname{Sym}^{2} \varphi, \chi\right) \approx_{\mathbb{Q}(\varphi, \chi)} P_{\infty}^{1}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu), m-k_{0}+1\right) \Omega_{r}^{+}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\Pi(\varphi)) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2}\right. \tag{6.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

It's an easy exercise to see that $\mathbb{Q}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\Pi(\varphi)), \chi\right) \subset \mathbb{Q}(\Pi(\varphi), \chi)=\mathbb{Q}(\varphi, \chi)$. (See also statements (4) and (5) of [34, Theorem 1.4].) Moreover, we may state this result in a Galois-equivariant manner.

A comparison of Equation (6.10) with the main result of Sturm [40] for the critical values of the symmetric-square $L$-functions for an elliptic modular form would lead us to speculate that our global period $\Omega_{r}^{+}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\Pi(\varphi))\right.$ is related in some explicit way to the Petersson inner product $\langle\varphi, \varphi\rangle$.

$$
F: C M \text { field }
$$

Let $\pi$ be a cohomological cuspidal automorphic representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{2} / F$ with purity weight w , that is, $\pi \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{2}, \mu\right)$ with $\mu \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{2}\right)$. Then for each $v \in S_{c}, \mu_{v}=\left(\mu^{\iota}, \mu^{\bar{\tau}}\right)$, where $\mu^{\iota}=(a, b) ; \mu^{\bar{\tau}}=\left(a^{*}, b^{*}\right)$ such that $a \geq b ; a^{*} \geq b^{*}$ and $a+b^{*}=b+a^{*}=\mathrm{w}$. By Gelbart-Jacquet [13] we know the existence of an isobaric automorphic representation $\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi)$ of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(\mathbb{A}_{F}\right)$, defined as
$\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi)=\otimes_{v}^{\prime} \operatorname{Sym}^{2}\left(\pi_{v}\right)$, where $\operatorname{Sym}^{2}\left(\pi_{v}\right)$ is an irreducible admissible representation of $\mathrm{GL}_{3}\left(F_{v}\right)$ obtained via the local Langlands symmetric-square transfer of $\pi_{v}$. Furthermore, following [29, Theorem 3.2],

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi) \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu)\right) \tag{6.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu)=\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu)^{\iota}, \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu)^{\bar{\iota}}\right)_{\iota \in \varepsilon_{F}}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu)^{\iota}=(2 a, a+b, 2 b) \text { and } \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu)^{\bar{\iota}}=\left(2 a^{*}, a^{*}+b^{*}, 2 b^{*}\right) . \tag{6.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Clearly the $\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu) \in X_{0}^{+}\left(T_{3}\right)$.

### 6.4.1 Proof of Theorem 1.6

By thinking of the symmetric square $L$-function on $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}$ as the standard $L$-function of the symmetric-square-twisted by an algebraic Hecke character $\chi$, and after using Equations (6.11) and (6.12), we get

$$
\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi) \in \operatorname{Coh}\left(G_{3}, \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu)\right)
$$

such that for each $v \in S_{\infty}, \operatorname{Sym}^{2}\left(\mu_{v}\right)=(2 a, 0,-2 a ; 2 a, 0,-2 a)$. In terms of notations of Theorem 1.3, we get $n_{1}=2 a$ and $n_{2}=-2 a$. Under the assumption that $a \geq t$, the critical set for $L\left(s, \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi) \otimes \chi\right)$ is given by $\{1-t \leq m \leq t\}$. Then Case $\mathbf{1}$ of Theorem 1.3 takes the form:
$L_{f}\left(m, \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi) \otimes \chi\right)$

$$
\left.\approx_{\mathbb{Q}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi), \chi, \phi\right)} P_{\infty}^{+}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu)\right), m\right) \Omega^{+}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi)\right) c^{+}\left(\phi \chi^{-1}\right) \mathcal{G}(\chi)^{2} \mathcal{G}(\phi),
$$

where $\left.P_{\infty}^{+}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu)\right), m\right)=(2 \pi i)^{1-m} p_{\infty}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\mu), m\right)$ and $\Omega^{+}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi)\right)=$ $p\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi)\right) L\left(0, \operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi) \otimes \phi\right)^{-1}$. Again its an easy exercise to see that

$$
\left.\mathbb{Q}\left(\operatorname{Sym}^{2}(\pi)\right) \cdot \chi, \phi\right) \subset \mathbb{Q}(\pi, \chi, \phi) .
$$

This proves the theorem.

## Bibliography

[1] I. N. Bernshtein, . V. Zelevinskii, Representations of the group GL $(n, F)$ where $F$ is a non archimedean local field. Russian Math. Surveys 31:3(1976) 1-68.
[2] D. Blasius, Period relations and critical values of L-functions, in: Olga Taussky-Todd, in Memoriam, eds. M. Aschbacher, D. Blasius and D. Ramakrishnan, Pacific J. Math., Special Issue, 183, No. 3, (1997), 5383.
[3] A. Borel, Regularization theorems in Lie algebra cohomology. Applications. Duke Math. J. 50 (1983), no. 3, 605-623.
[4] A. Borel and H. Jacquet, Automorphic forms and automorphic representations. In: Proc. Sympos. Pure Math., Vol. XXXIII, part I, AMS, Providence, R.I., (1979), 189-202.
[5] A. Borel and N. Wallach, Continuous Cohomology, Discrete subgroups, and representations of reductive groups, 2nd ed. Mathematical Surbeys and Monographs 67. Providence, RI: American Mathematical Society, 2000.
[6] D. Bump, Automorphic forms and representations, Cambridge Studies in Advanced Mathematics, 55. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge (1997).
[7] W. Casselman, On some results of Atkin and Lehner, Math. Ann., 201 (1973) 301-314.
[8] W. Casselman and J. Shalika, The unramified principal series of p-adic groups, II, The Whittaker function, Compositio Math., 41(2) (1980), 207-231.
[9] L. Clozel, Motifs et Formes Automorphes: Applications du Principe de Fonctorialité. In: Automorphic forms, Shimura varieties, and Lfunctions, Vol. I, Perspect. Math., vol. 10, eds. L. Clozel and J. S. Milne, (Ann Arbor, MI, 1988) Academic Press, Boston, MA, 1990, pp. 77-159.
[10] J.W. Cogdell, H.H. Kim and M.R. Murty, Lectures on Automorphic Lfunctions. American Mathematical Society. Volume 20 of Fields Institute Monographs.
[11] P. Deligne, Valeurs de fonctions L et périodes d'intégrales, With an appendix by N. Koblitz and A. Ogus. In: Proc. Sympos. Pure Math., Vol. XXXIII, part II, AMS, Providence, R.I., (1979), pp. 313-346.
[12] D. Prasad and A. Raghuram, Kirillov Theory for GL2(D) where D is a division algebra over a non-Archimedean local field, Duke Math. J. 104, no. 1 (2000).
[13] S. Gelbart and H. Jacquet, A relation between automorphic representations of GL(2) and GL(3). Ann. Sci. École Norm. Sup., (4) 11, no. 4, 471-542 (1978).
[14] A Geroldinger, p-adic automorphic L-functions on GL(3). Ramanujan J. 38 (2015), no. 3, 641-682.
[15] R. Goodman, and N. Wallach, Symmetry, representations, and invariants. Graduate Texts in Mathematics, 255. Springer, Dordrecht, 2009.
[16] G. Harder, Eisenstein cohomology of arithmetic groups. The case GL. Invent. Math. 89, no. 1, 37-118 (1987).
[17] G. Harder and A. Raghuram, Eisenstein Cohomology for $\mathrm{GL}_{N}$ and ratios of critical values of Rankin-Selberg L-functions. Preprint available at http://arxiv.org/pdf/1405.6513.pdf
[18] M. Harris, and J.Lie, Period relations and special values of RankinSelberg L-functions (2016).
[19] H. Hida, On the critical values of L-functions of GL(2) and GL(2) $\times$ GL(2). Duke Math. J. 74, no. 2 (1994) 431-529.
[20] H. Jacquet and J. Shalika, A non-vanishing theorem for zeta-functions of $\mathrm{GL}_{n}$, Invent. Math., 38, (1976), 1-16.
[21] H. Jacquet, I. Piatetski-Shapiro and J. Shalika. Conducteur des représentations du groupe linéaire. (French) [Conductor of linear group representations] Math. Ann., 256, no. 2, 199-214 (1981).
[22] H. Kasten and C.-G. Schmidt, On critical values of Rankin-Selberg convolutions, Int. J. Number Theory 9 (2013), no. 1, 205-256.
[23] D. Kazhdan, B. Mazur, and C.-G. Schmidt, Relative modular symbols and Rankin-Selberg convolutions. J. Reine Angew. Math. 519 (2000) 97141.
[24] A. W.Knapp, Local Langlands correspondence: the Archimedean case. In: Motives, Proc. Sympos. Pure Math., Vol. 55, Part 2, AMS, Providence, R.I., (1994) 393-410.
[25] J. Lin, Special values of automorphic L-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{n} \times \mathrm{GL}_{n^{\prime}}$ over CM fields, factorization and functoriality of arithmetic automorphic periods. Thesis, submitted in (2015).
[26] J. Mahnkopf, Modular symbols and values of L-functions on $\mathrm{GL}_{3}$. J. Reine Angew. Math., 497 (1998) 91-112.
[27] J. Neukirch, Algebraic number theory. Translated from the 1992 German original and with a note by Norbert Schappacher. With a foreword by G. Harder. Grundlehren der Mathematischen Wissenschaften [Fundamental Principles of Mathematical Sciences], 322. Springer-Verlag, Berlin. xviii +571 pp (1999).
[28] A.A.Panchishkin, Motives over totally real fields and p-adic Lfunctions. Ann. Inst. Fourier, 44 (1994) 989-1023.
[29] A. Raghuram, Critical values of Rankin-Selberg L-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{n} \times$ $\mathrm{GL}_{n-1}$ and the symmetric cube L-functons for $\mathrm{GL}_{2}$. Forum Math., 28 (2016) No. 3, 457-489.
[30] A. Raghuram, On the special values of certain Rankin-Selberg Lfunctions and applications to odd symmetric power L-functions of modular forms. Int. Math. Res. Not. Vol. (2010) 334-372, doi:10.1093/imrn/rnp127.
[31] A. Raghuram and G. Sachdeva, Critical values of L-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times$ $\mathrm{GL}_{1}$ over a totally real field. Heidelberg proceedings (2017), accepted.
[32] A. Raghuram and F. Shahidi, Functoriality and special values of $L$ functions. In: Eisenstein series and Applications, eds. W.T.Gan, S. Kudla, and Y. Tschinkel, Progress in Mathematics, 258 (Boston, 2008) 271-294.
[33] A. Raghuram and F. Shahidi, On certain period relations for cusp forms on $\mathrm{GL}_{n}$. Int. Math. Res. Not. Vol. (2008), doi:10.1093/imrn/rnn077.
[34] A. Raghuram and N. Tanabe, Notes on the arithmetic of Hilbert modular forms, J. Ramanujan Math. Soc. 26(3) (2011) 261-319.
[35] G. Sachdeva, Critical values of L-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{3} \times \mathrm{GL}_{1}$ and symmetric square L-functions for $\mathrm{GL}_{2}$ over a CM field, preprint (2017).
[36] R. Schmidt, Some remarks on Local newforms for GL(2), J. Ramanujan Math. Soc., 17 (2002), no. 2, 115-147.
[37] N. Schappacher, Periods of Hecke Characters. Mathematical Theory of Efficient Piracy, Lecture Notes in Mathematics, 1301, Springer Verlag, New York NY, 1988.
[38] F. Shahidi, On certain L-functions, Amer. J. Math., 103(2) (1981), 297355.
[39] G. Shimura, The special values of the zeta functions associated with cusp forms, Comm. Pure Appl. Math., 29, no. 6, 783-804, (1976).
[40] J. Sturm, Special values of zeta functions, and Eisenstein series of half integral weight. Amer. J. Math., 102 (1980), no. 2, 219-240.
[41] B. Sun, The nonvanishing hypothesis at infinity for Rankin-Selberg convolutions. J. Amer. Math. Soc., 30 (2017), no. 1, 1-25.
[42] J.-L. Waldspurger, Quelques propriéteś arithmétiqués de certaines formes automorphes sur GL(2). Comp. Math. 54 (1985) 121-171.
[43] A. Weil, On a certain type of characters of the idéle class group of an algebraic number field. Proceedings of the international symposium on algebraic number theory, Tokyo and Nikko, 1955, pp. 1-7. Science Council of Japan, Tokyo, 1956.
[44] A. Weil, Basic number theory. Classics in Mathematics. Springer. Volume 144, 1973.

